

---

Bulletin of the  
**T**EXAS  
**A**RCHEOLOGICAL  
**S**OCIETY Volume 71/2000

---

Timothy K. Perttula, Editor  
Linda W. Ellis, Assistant Editor

---

Published by the Society at Austin

2000

---





## CONTENTS

In Their Own Words: Stories from Some Pioneer Texas Archeologists <i>Curtis Tunnell</i> .....	1
--	---

### BOOK REVIEWS

<i>The Coronado Expedition to Tierra Nueva: The 1540-1542 Route Across the Southwest,</i> edited by Richard Flint and Shirley Cushing Flint .....	
<i>Timothy K. Pertula</i> .....	147
<i>Goff Creek: Artifact Collection Strategy and Occupation Prehistory on the Southern High Plains, Texas County, Oklahoma,</i> by Jesse A. M. Ballenger	
<i>David T. Hughes</i> .....	149



---

## In Their Own Words: Stories from Some Pioneer Texas Archeologists

---

*Curtis Tunnell*

---

### INTRODUCTION

While working as Curator of Anthropology at the Texas Memorial Museum, in April 1965, I made a trip to Tucson, Arizona, to meet with E. B. "Ted" Sayles and negotiate for the return of some of the Texas materials collected during his archeological survey of Texas in 1931-1934 (see Sayles 1935).

Several pleasant days were spent with Ted in his adobe home in Old Town Tucson. We talked archeology, looked at collections, drank martinis, pored over ancient field notes, and visited Snaketown where Emil Haury was excavating. Ted was writing some children's books on archeology at the time (*Throw Stone*, and others), and hoping to write-up a linear survey, done years earlier, along Elm Creek near Abilene. Not long after my return, it dawned on me that I should have recorded some of Ted's stories, like the one about him doing a boat survey down the Colorado River from Ballinger to Austin when he was just a teenager.

And then I began to realize that I had been privileged to know many of the real pioneers in Texas archeology. Of course, "Doctor" J. E. Pearce, Victor Smith, George C. Martin, and Forrest Kirkland died before my time, but while working with Dr. Jack T. Hughes at the Panhandle Plains Historical Museum in the early 1950s, I had talked to Floyd Studer many times about his work on the slab house ruins in the Canadian River valley. At annual Texas Archeological Society (TAS) meetings in the late 1950s, I often heard Dr. Cyrus Ray stand up in the audience and expound in opposition to papers being presented. Although disruptive at the meetings, he was respected as the grand old man of the TAS.

While working at the Texas Memorial Museum in the early 1960s, I met A. T. Jackson and got him to sign my copy of his book on Rock Art. Mr. Jackson was a quiet and very thin old man in

stiffly starched khaki pants and shirt. Later I bought some of his reference books on rock art at a local antique shop and realized that he had passed away. While at the museum, I often visited Dr. E. H. Sellards in his office at the Little Campus. He was a wizened little man with a baldhead just like mine. He would always find a few more reprints of his published articles to give to me. "A Prince of a Man" is what Glen Evans called Carl Chelf, and that may have been understated. Carl was interested in everything about nature and people. He could talk knowledgeably about hundreds of things, and keep me entertained for hours. I used to visit him in his great old 1898 junk shop in Buda, where he would let me price things that I was interested in and then sell them to me for half-price. King Harris, one of the Grand Old Men, took me on several trips in the late 1960s to every mound site up and down Red River. We spent many pleasant days in his artifact room studying bead charts and fingering fancy flints. To paraphrase one of King's favorite sayings: "All it took was potsherds and red beans to keep us happy." Roland Beard of Goliad shared his stories of excavations at Presidio La Bahía, Mission Espíritu Santo, Fort Griffin, and other sites, and showed me boxes of meticulous records and photographs which he had made.

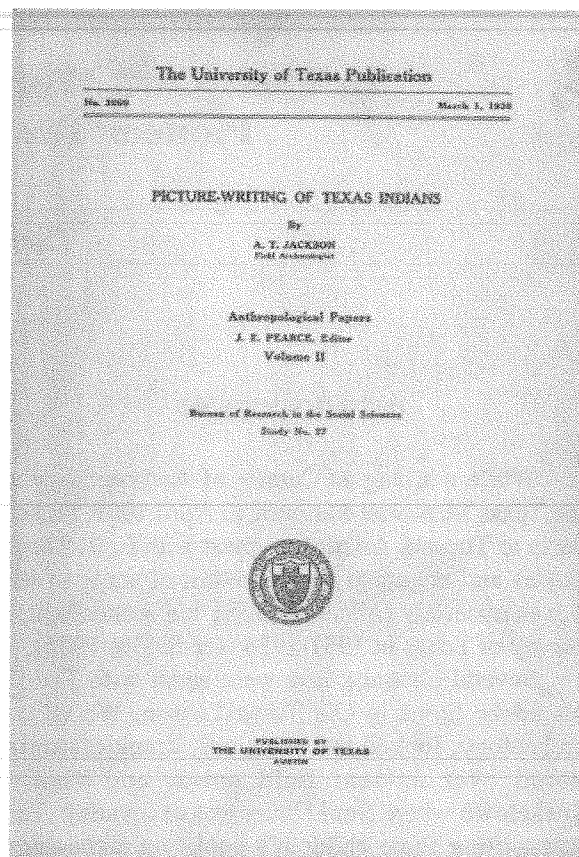
A bit belatedly, I decided to buy a tape recorder and go to work. Glen Evans was one of my first formal interviews in February 1978. Glen may be the best storyteller in Texas, and possibly the world, so after interviewing him I was hooked on oral history. Dr. J. Charles Kelley and Dr. Joe Ben Wheat were also great storytellers, and they filled in some information about Victor Smith and his work. As time permitted, interviews with Dr. Curry Holden, Dr. Alex Krieger, Dr. E. Mott Davis, Dr. T. N. Campbell, and Dr. F. Earl Green followed. Then I managed to corner Dr. Edward B. Jelks, Dr. Jack T. Hughes, Dr. Fred Wendorf, Dr. Dee Ann

## 2 Texas Archeological Society

Story, Frank "Chief" Runkles, and William Crook. A pleasant interlude in the home of Dr. Clarence Webb gave interesting archeological information on the Caddoan area. Dr. J. Gilbert McAllister was interviewed when he was in his 80s and wore long white hair and beard, and still drove his 1955 Studebaker down to the post office each day. Gene Mear, Billy Harrison, Larry Banks, Marjorie Krieger, and Dr. LeRoy Johnson, Jr. completed my recording sessions with the not-too-old timers.

Most of the interviews quoted herein were originally recorded on reel-to-reel magnetic tapes. The original recordings were copied to tape cassettes, and then laboriously transcribed verbatim in their entirety. Many hours were spent searching out the best stories in the verbatim transcripts. All questions by the interviewer were eliminated when a draft of the selected excerpts was made. The next step was to carefully edit the stories to remove obvious redundancies and extraneous words such as "and uh." I feel that the final version of the interviews as they appear here accurately reflects the original words of the interviewees.

Stories in these archeological recordings generally span the time from the late 1920s to the early 1960s. Those three decades saw the knowledge of Texas archeology go from a few early reports of mounds, caves, and burned rock middens, to a substantial cultural chronology spanning over 10 millennia. Archeological practitioners went from amateurs in Model T Fords to Ph.D. anthropologists using space-age technologies. Some of the most famous Paleoindian sites, such as Plainview, Cowan Ranch, Blackwater Draw, Lubbock Lake, Midland, Kincaid, and Lewisville, were excavated during this period. Our knowledge of Caddo ceramic chronology and stone projectile point styles was primarily developed in those decades. Massive Works Progress Administration (WPA) projects were carried out and still remain largely unanalyzed and unreported. Some classics in archeological literature, including Krieger's (1946) *Culture Complexes and Chronology* and Jackson's (1938a) *Picture-Writing of Texas Indians*, the George C. Davis Site report by Newell and Krieger (1949), and the famous Handbook of Texas Archeology by Suhm, Krieger, and Jelks (1954), were published in that time. Some thirty annual bulletins published by the Texas Archeological Society still form an important body of archeological literature for those decades.



Cover to *Picture-Writing of Texas Indians*

Somewhere during the course of my odyssey, I discovered archeological correspondence. Many institutions, libraries, and individuals have random bits and pieces of correspondence between the archeological pioneers. Over the course of a quarter century I have copied hundreds of letters between Pearce and Sayles, Holden and Ray, Studer and Moorehead, Krieger and Kelley, Newell and Jackson, Smith and Gladwin, Sellards and Evans, Webb and Krieger, McAllister and Sellards, and many many other such combinations. This body of data, also in their own words, gives wonderful insights into relationships, contributions, opinions, and research interests, and will frequently be quoted in this study.

Another source of information about the early archeological projects is found in newspaper clippings. While by no means exhaustive, I do have a good collection of clippings, some of which were saved by Pearce, McAllister, and Chelf, and these will be quoted from time to time. The sheer volume of newspaper stories related to archeology in the

decade of the 1930s shows an abiding interest in the subject on the part of the public. Some articles give excellent descriptions of WPA projects, while others leave one to wonder, such as this one from the *Waco Tribune*, for August 4, 1933:

The village of Elam was agog today over the discovery late yesterday of the skull of a "Devil Man" on the farm of O. J. Doughty. The skull, bearing every resemblance to a human but adorned with short horns just above the eyes, was found in a gravel pit 20 feet under the ground level. The horns, about two inches long, protrude from the skull about an inch above the outer edge of the eye sockets. It was recalled that Grandpa Elam, who died at 93, used to tell children of a "Devil Man" who came out of the hills to frighten the Indians.

A myriad of technical books and reports are crammed with the hard archeological facts from the beginning decades of Texas archeology. But the stories of the archeologists who did the work contain the humor, excitement, insights, and ephemera which adds some flesh to archeological bones. I hope you will enjoy reading stories from the real Indiana Jones' of Texas. This is not intended as a history of Texas archeology, nor have I attempted to be all inclusive of everyone who made archeological contributions during the early decades. This is intended as a volume for reading rather than for reference. More exhaustive studies are left for the next generation to pursue.

### JAMES EDWIN PEARCE

Although never awarded a Ph.D. degree, he was known to generations of archeologists and Texans as "Doctor Pearce." He was perhaps the most notable early champion for the discipline of anthropology, archeological research, and a state museum for Texas.

Doctor Pearce believed in amassing archeological collections, and he pursued it with a passion. For the most part, he acquired materials through excavations, but he also purchased some private collections. His dream was to have a major anthropological museum on campus, which would be used for teaching, and he felt that acquiring extensive collections was the key to getting such a facility. He also knew

that archeological sites were being plundered by vandals, and he felt a need to preserve as much of the prehistoric record as possible.

His first "museum" was in Sutton Hall, and eventually it occupied most of the top floor of Waggoner Hall on the University of Texas at Austin campus. After his death in 1938, some of the collections were transferred to the new Texas Memorial Museum, but there was no room for the bulk of the archeological collections that had accumulated by that time. Pearce's "Anthropology Museum" still occupied much of the basement of Pearce Hall when I arrived at the University in the late 1950s. Eventually the contents of this museum, and archeological collections stored at Little Campus, formed the basis of the collections at the Texas Archeological Research Laboratory (TARL).

### Bureau of American Ethnology

In a letter to Dr. Charles Walcott of the Bureau of American Ethnology, dated October 23, 1914, Pearce inquired:

I wish to know if the Bureau of Ethnology has funds at its disposal which might be devoted to the investigation of early Indian life within Texas and adjacent regions. I have been told by Dr. Bolton,<sup>1</sup> formerly of the University of Texas, now of the University of California, that the



"Doctor" J. E. Pearce. Courtesy of the Texas Archeological Research Laboratory (TARL), The University of Texas at Austin.



Anthropology Museum, Waggoner Hall, in the 1930s. Courtesy TARL, G-267.

Bureau at one time had funds that might have been devoted to this investigation. The University of Texas is very much interested in getting together some adequate account of the various races, stocks and kinship groups that existed within the Texas region at the time of the first white occupation, and in interpreting their social and industrial life as completely as may be done at this late date. The importance of the Texas field in the general ethnography of the Indians of the United States must be evident at a glance to one who will recall the fact that Texas lies between the great Mississippi Valley region and the region of Ancient Mexico, and is as a whole a transition field between the distinctive Mexican culture and the equally distinctive culture of the Mississippi Valley tribes. I should be glad to undertake the direction and supervision of the work suggested, or any part of it, under the auspices of the Bureau of Ethnology and the University of Texas.

This effort by Pearce finally bore fruit when on April 19, 1919, J. Walter Fewkes wrote him:

You are hereby authorized to undertake excavation of mounds at Dry Creek, Round Rock, Gatesville, and adjoining caves, in Texas, for the purpose of gather-

ing information regarding the prehistoric inhabitants of that state. Your necessary and incidental expenses for travel, subsistence, and hire of laborers, not to exceed \$500.00 will be reimbursed to you on the presentation of certified vouchers, from the appropriation for American Ethnology 1919. It is understood that you will prepare a report on the work accomplished for the Bureau.

Pearce wrote Fewkes on October 11, 1919:

I visited three large fine mounds near Alto [George C. Davis site]. One of these is about 30 feet high and 100 feet across at the base.

It is very steep and perfectly symmetrical. The other two mounds are lower but quite as large. The first has been dug into by the owner who found, I was told, skeletal remains and pottery. I saw other smaller and less notable mounds at various places.

### Archeological Society

Pearce wrote to E. B. Sayles, in a letter dated October 22, 1928, concerning the establishment of the Texas Archeological Society:



Merrell Site Excavations, Williamson County. J. E. Pearce, second from left, and Jack Laughlin, high right.

Needless to say, I am thoroughly in accord with any effort to develop an interest in Texas archaeology [Pearce always used the second "a" in archaeology]. In fact I have been intending for some years to attempt the organization of a statewide association. I have delayed in the undertaking of such an organization in the hope of securing a state museum to serve as headquarters for such an association and as a means of preserving and exhibiting materials collected by the association. I have not felt sure that it would be wise to encourage local organizations throughout the state to engage in efforts at archaeological exploration before adequate professional guidance and direction could be had. Amateur archaeologists all over the world have done an immense amount of mischief by digging up and confusing archaeological materials so that real scientists later were unable to study stratification and give the scientific meaning to archaeological objects obtained either by the amateurs or later professional exploration.

In the late 1920s Pearce began pushing hard for a State Museum in Austin, to commemorate the Texas Centennial approaching in 1936. A great many letters and clippings attest to his persistence in this effort, which culminated in the construction of the Texas Memorial Museum, completed in 1938 a few months before Pearce's death. Less well known was the fact that Doctor Pearce established an Anthropology museum on campus in the late 1920s which still existed in the basement of Pearce Hall when I arrived at the University in the late 1950s. In a letter from Robert T. Hill to President Benedict, dated April 28, 1932, the famous geologist said:

I wish, also to say that you seem to have a great faculty there in many respects. All whom I met seemed deeply imbued with their subjects. Besides seeing much of the geologists, I spent a half-day each with Professors Pearce and Dobie. Both are doing great work for the University. Everybody knows about Dobie's good work, for it advertises itself. But Doctor Pearce is also

doing splendid work on that East Texas Archaeology. It is wonderful work, and when published will bring great renown to your institution. I have never seen more instructive pottery and symbolism than shown in his little museum. And speaking of the museum, did you run up a flag when he opened it? It is the first one on a scientific basis that I have seen in Texas!

Because of Doctor Pearce's passion for archeology and A. T. Jackson's journalism experience, they got lots of publicity for the University of Texas in the decades of the 1920s and 1930s. Hardly a week passed without an archeological story in some Texas paper. A sampling of excerpts from some of these stories follows:

*Port Arthur News*, February 14, 1926:

A creditable start toward a state museum for Texas was made recently when members of the faculty of the University of Texas interested in the project met for further discussion of plans, according to J. E. Pearce professor of anthropology, who was elected president of the organization formed at that time.

*Abilene Reporter*, May 19, 1927:

Camp sites thousands of years old on the plains of Texas and ancient funeral mounds in the wooded regions of the state may hold the secret of the relations of three of the greatest Indian civilizations ever on the American continent. The Aztecs of ancient Mexico, the Pueblo dwellers of Southwest United States and the mysterious Mound Builders of the Mississippi Valley form a triangle at the apex of which lie the remains of a little-known culture of prehistoric Texas, says Dr. J. E. Pearce, professor of anthropology of the University of Texas. Ancient campsites known as the Burnt Rock Mounds, are found on the plains and prairies of Texas. Dr. Pearce says these mounds are from four to five feet high and many of the mounds contain as much as 1,500 cubic yards of refuse.



*Austin Statesman*, September 8, 1927:

From a funeral mound worn away by the shifting course of the Red River there has recently come to the University of Texas a collection of fifteen pieces of primitive pottery. The collection was bought by J.E. Pearce, professor of anthropology. The pottery along with a human skull were found in Red River County on the S.S. Watson place. There were undoubtedly more remains which were washed away, said Mr. Pearce, for the funeral mound covered at least half an acre and was twenty-five to thirty feet high. Mr. Pearce said that no doubt the vessels were made by ancestors of the Caddo Indians of East Texas who were makers of remarkably good pottery.

*Austin Statesman*, July 11, 1929:

Indian mounds around Blockhouse Spring west of Cedar Park, are being explored by J. E. Pearce, professor of anthropology at the University of Texas. This is the largest source of archeological material he has yet located. It is seven feet deep in its central portions and covers an acre and a half of ground.

*Austin Statesman*, November 21, 1929:

One of nature's freaks or the handiwork of an ancient sculptor, a rock uncovered in a gravel pit near Malakoff has attracted the attention of the University of Texas research department. The rock, 24 feet underground, rolled free while workmen were digging for gravel. It is several times larger than a man's head. The nose, ears and point of the chin are raised, the eyes and mouth indented. Above the eyes and apparently carved, are eyebrows. The lips are parted, showing teeth, and wrinkles from the corners of the mouth indicate a smile. At the bottom of the stone a hole has been drilled, probably for mounting its discoverers say.

*San Antonio Light*, September 19, 1930, by Col. M. L. Crimmins:

While visiting the University of Texas recently I had the great pleasure of seeing the rare anthropological collection of Dr. J. E. Pearce at the new museum on the top floor of Sutton hall. We saw so much material that I had never seen in the Museum of the American Indian and the Museum of Natural History in New York or in the Smithsonian and National Museums in Washington, or in fact, in any other museum.

*Austin Statesman*, undated (ca. 1931):

Relics of an ancient Indian civilization found in a mound on property owned by T. M. Sanders at Direct, in Lamar County have been sold to the University of Texas, and a party from the anthropology department of the University, under direction of Prof. J. E. Pearce, is now engaged in excavating the site for other remains. Two group burials have been uncovered in the mound and are being taken out intact for exhibit at the university museum. A curious triple bottle was found with the burial group. The collection sold by Mr. Sanders to the university, included jars, pots, bottles and bowls of clay pottery; chipped and ground implements and weapons of stone and flint; a pipe bowl and other articles; shell beads strung together with medallions or gorgets of shell, elaborately pierced and engraved in conventionalized designs.

Unknown, November 25, 1932:

The A.T. Jackson archeological party are completing their exploration of Seminole Caverns [Fate Bell Shelter] located about 50 miles west of Del Rio. Deposits were found over the floor of the cave from a depth of 16 to 18 inches to eight and one-half feet. The exploring party dug an eight-foot trench, 20 feet wide and 100 feet long through the flooring of the cave, requiring the work of five men for four weeks. The collection



is priceless, Jackson said, and will next be seen by West Texans under glass cases, locks and key.

*Austin Statesman*, February 22, 1933:

In the spring and summer of 1931, several sites of importance were worked out, Professor Pearce said. The first of these was on the J. M. Riley farm, about twenty miles northeast of Gilmer. At this place we encountered eighteen burials, at depths ranging from 23 inches to 49 inches and obtained 179 pottery vessels, two pipes, 94 arrowpoints, 7 celts and various less important artifacts, he said. There was an average here of ten pieces of pottery to the burial, the largest figure for any site we have worked in the state. The general average for the region is from five to six.

At the H. R. Taylor farm in northwest Harrison County about twenty miles northwest of Marshall, we explored the richest single burial place that we have investigated to date. Several of our records were broken at this site; namely, those for pottery from one site, 528 pieces; of pottery from one burial, 26 pieces; of artifacts from one burial, 71; our largest cooking pot, 7 gallons; and the largest number of arrowpoints from burials in one site, 269. We were able to recognize 64 burials at this place and got an average of eight to nine pieces of pottery from each burial.

*Austin Statesman*, February 11, 1934:

One of the finest and most complete collections of Indian relics in the world is that of the University of Texas department of anthropology, supervised by A. T. Jackson, foreman of field work for the department.

*Austin Statesman*, March 29, 1934:

An ethnological collection including 70 Javanese weapons and artifacts has been left with the University of Texas for display by Mr. and Mrs. David C. Harrell of

Austin, former students in anthropology in the University. The collection has been placed in the museum on the fourth floor of Waggoner Hall where Prof. J. E. Pearce of the anthropology department will arrange it in a special case. Mr. and Mrs. Harrell were recently in Java for four years when Mr. Harrell, petroleum geologist, was engaged in the search for oil. The couple traveled in various out-of-the-way parts of Java, Sumatra, Borneo and Bali.

*Austin Statesman*, May 25, 1934:

With all this Centennial talk going on, we thought you might like to hear from Prof. James E. Pearce, a man who takes a big, broad view of Texas History. To Mr. Pearce, the Austins, Houstons, et al. are relative newcomers to the Texas scene, and Cabeza de Vaca, who landed here 400 years ago, has hardly established his place on the records. When Mr. Pearce mentions early Texans, he means Early Texans. He means men who lived and fought and hunted—perhaps on the site of your own home—10,000 to 20,000 years ago. He finds his history written deep underground, buried by the sediment of ages before America was known to European man. He estimates that the human bones he recently found, 18 feet deep in a river terrace near Round Rock are at least 10,000 years old. But these are relatively new as the anthropology of the world goes. Human bones found in China are approximately 1,000,000 years old.

*Austin Statesman*, September 27, 1935:

A plea for unity and integrity in the treatment of the history of civilization is made by Prof. J. E. Pearce, University of Texas anthropologist and archaeologist, in a treatise that has been published as a university bulletin under the title, *Tales That Dead Men Tell*. In this paper Prof. Pearce has placed emphasis upon the general principles of science that underlie and run through any and all consistent field work and interpretation in archaeology, giving this science value and its proper

place and importance in the history of human culture. Archaeology is the science that seeks to uncover and interpret, sometimes to reconstruct, the history of human culture from its earliest beginnings to the present time, and is worked out upon a basis of careful analytical and comparative study of the things man leaves behind him.

*Austin Statesman*, July 23, 1937:

At the mouth of Falls Creek some twenty miles above Buchanan Dam on the Colorado River is found one of the most productive sites for archeological excavations in Texas. Here J. E. Pearce, professor of anthropology at the University of Texas and supervisor of a WPA project has found thousands of specimens. When a \$9,000 WPA grant became available last January, Professor Pearce began exploration of Indian campsites located above Austin in the lakebeds. A beautiful stratification is found at Falls Creek, Professor Pearce stated. The lowest strata he estimated is at least 10,000 years old. The creek rises on the west side of the river, approaches the larger stream from a high plateau of hard limestone, and then plunges 104 feet, forming the most beautiful waterfall in Texas.

*Austin Statesman*, September 24, 1938:

Modern name and initial scratchers are ruining important records left by early inhabitants of Texas, A. T. Jackson, archeologist of the University of Texas, reports. He advocates creation of state parks at the principal sites of pictographs and petroglyphs in order that they may be preserved. There are 195 sites in the state where picture writings now exist. They are found in 44 of the state's 254 counties. Red, black, yellow and white are used in the pictographs. Human figures have been found less than 3 inches in height and some are 10 feet tall. Animal figures range in length from 2 inches to 7 feet.

*Austin Statesman*, October 23, 1938:

J. Frank Dobie, professor of English said: "J. E. Pearce was what is very rare among American scholars. He was a positive man and a penetrating and stimulating thinker. Although, as an anthropologist, he dealt with the beginnings of the human race, he was anything but a mere antiquarian. He was an interpreter of life, fiercely battling, often against executive timidity and smallness, for freedom of human thought. His book, *Tales That Dead Men Tell*, is a superb plea for tolerance; also it is written in a style that hardly a half-dozen other Texas books of this century have attained to.

Valley Mills newspaper, November 18, 1938:

Jesse J. Howard tells us that he dug up 3 ancient Indian skeletons last week near Coryell City. They were all found in a cave. In the grave he found innumerable small beads made of Cedar berry. At the head was placed a mortar used to grind seeds and roots for food. Near the breast was an ornament known to archeologists as a gorget made of beautiful banded slate, and bone pins, obviously used in the clothing. Jesse says he went to a depth of six feet in the floor of the cave. Dr. Pearce, teacher of archaeology at the University of Texas, who has recently passed to the great beyond, said that the date of the first inhabitants of the caves was from six to ten thousand years ago. Many a shovel full of dirt must be removed before the ancient history of America will be interpreted. Most historians seem to think that America was just a land full of naked savages until Columbus' boots stamped CIVILIZATION upon its face.

But before Europeans ever dreamed of a land to the West, the Aztecs of Mexico were building temples as great as the ancient pyramids of Egypt, and the Incas of Peru were doing bridge work that causes modern stone masons to wonder. And while King Arthur and his knights were throwing food scraps on the floor to

the dogs after a drunken feast, the Pueblo Indians of the Southwestern caves were dumping all trash off the cliffs and knew not the sorrows of strong drink. Archaeology might be defined as a rescue expedition sent into the far places of the world to recover the lost pages of Man's autobiography.

*Texarkana Gazette*, January 8, 1939:

An interesting WPA project has been in progress for several weeks on the W. E. Hatchell farm, 11 miles north of Texarkana, under the direction of William C. Beatty, Jr. Beatty with an assistant and 42 WPA workers, are excavating a large mound searching for traces of long-ago Indian life. The mound, 30 feet high, 175 feet long and 150 feet wide, contains traces of at least two separate Indian houses, Beatty said. Two feet under the surface of the mound was found a hard-packed dirt and clay floor, dotted with 167 postholes. As excavation work goes on, dirt is taken from the mound and thrown down a chute. Wheelbarrows are used to transport the dirt from excavations to the chute. A. T. Jackson, of Austin, is in charge of the work in Texas, financed by the WPA.

*Daily Texan*, January 20, 1939:

For its cultural, as well as patriotic significance, the opening of Texas Memorial Museum on the University campus at Austin will be outstanding on the 1939 events program. That institution was about three years in the building and more than a quarter-century before that in the making. That creative process was mainly the work of one man, the late James E. Pearce, professor of anthropology at the University. Professor Pearce conceived the idea of the institution fully a quarter-century ago and, through many discouraging years, carried forward a campaign in its behalf almost single-handed. It is deeply regretted not only by scientists, but by all Texans who take pride in their State's

past, that Professor Pearce could not have lived to see completed the enterprise to which he gave the best years of his life.

*Goose Creek News-Tribune*, April 27, 1939:

One of the largest Indian mounds in Texas is being explored on the Red River near here. A.T. Jackson, university archeologist, said the mound is 190 feet long, 145 feet wide, and 30 feet high. Approximately one-fourth of its area has been explored. The workmen have uncovered seven floor levels to houses in the Indian village. Seven smaller Indian mounds have been found within a three-mile radius, and two cemeteries had about 60 graves. Other excavation projects carried on under the \$181,000 University WPA program are at Victoria, Graham, and in Central Texas.

*Abilene Reporter-News*, May 3, 1939:

Twenty five feet underground, evidences of ancient man have been discovered on a terrace bordering the Colorado river 10 miles north of Austin. This report was made by A. T. Jackson, anthropologist of the University of Texas. Five different times man lived on this site. Each time his implements were buried.

*Menard News*, March 28, 1940:

In the summer of 1931 the Department of Anthropology of the University of Texas excavated an ancient Indian village site on a small tributary of Red River in Lamar County near Paris, Texas. The village site [Sanders Site], covering two large partially man-made mounds, proved to be one of the most interesting finds which has come to light in East Texas. This site has yielded many unusual group burials, as well as beautiful pottery. A dig of approximately two months duration tested and almost completely excavated the village. Sixty skeletons, many vessels of fine pottery, thousands of beads, pipes, rare neck pendants, and arrow points were found.

[The archeologists decided] Why not take a complete burial, vessels and all, out of the ground and place it in the museum just as it was found? The problem seems to be simple enough, but in practice there are limiting features. First of all, a burial that is roughly 4 x 6 feet and contains five skeletons, is heavy, cumbersome, and fragile. Luckily the surrounding dirt was firm. After the grave had been undercut, a box was built around the sides. The undercutting was accomplished by sawing the dirt with a tightened barb wire strand. As the barbwire moved forward, heavy sheet metal followed. In the end, the burial was crated, but the extreme weight and lack of lifting equipment made it necessary for many farmers in the region to assist in lifting it onto a trailer before it began its long trek to Austin. Laboratory preparation revealed many additional shell beads and one large conch shell pendant that had not been visible when the burial was first uncovered. The opinion has been expressed that some of the skeletons represent slaves or wives killed to accompany the husband to the Land of the Dead, but evidence of death by violence was lacking on the skeletal material.

### On Anthropology

Doctor Pearce's article on "Anthropology As An Element Of Rational Education" was published in December 1927 (Pearce 1927). In it he says:

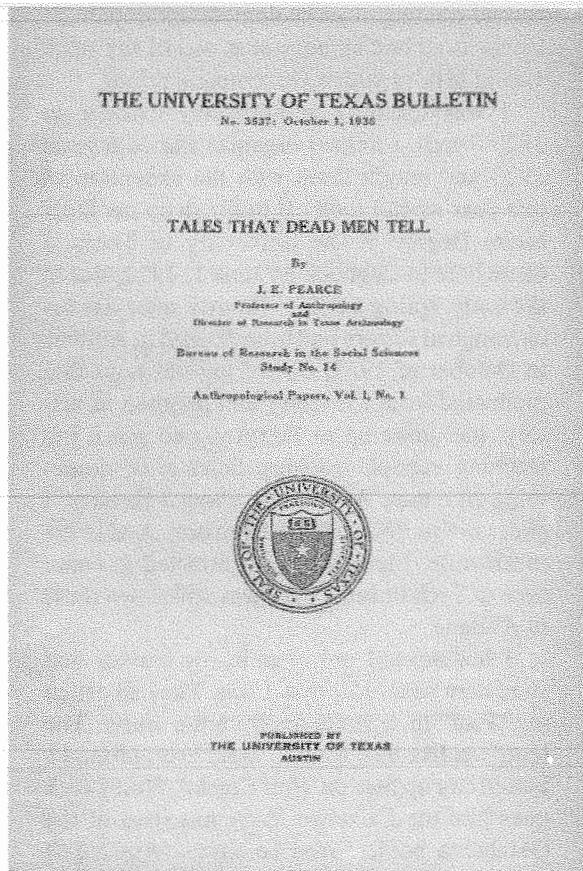
Anthropology, in contrast to history, sociology and psychology, grew out of natural science and has, necessarily, the natural science methods and line of approach. As an organized science it was the direct result of the publication of *The Origin Of Species* and of *The Descent Of Man*, which launched the study of the physical or organic side of man, and of the publication, later, of Tylor's *Primitive Culture*, which started systematic investigation of the social side of his nature. It has been very much influenced by museum development and by museum treatment of the materials and facts that have to do with the past life of man.

Anthropological study drives necessarily towards rational views of life in its influence upon those who pursue it and is apt to seriously modify, if it does not destroy, interests formerly entertained in certain long established 'prelogical' or folk-lore ideas and interpretations. All practices and beliefs partaking of the nature of the irrational and arbitrary are apt to lose their hold on the young student of anthropology through comparison with like beliefs and practices found in savage life, which are obviously inept and futile. Since many highly organized views of life, some of which may be found in college curricula, have essentially the bearing and the nature of cults, specialists and theorists, whose subjects and views for one reason or another have a wider acceptance than is their due, are apt to oppose a rationalizing line of study like anthropology and to minimize its influence as far as they can. Religious fundamentalists, ultra patriots, rigorous classicists, and all who hold to a narrow or partial view of life, find it disturbing and are apt to dislike it, even though they may tolerate it.

In stating the reasons why anthropology is so slow in getting the recognition and position which, logically, it should have in the schools, one is giving, it happens, the exact reasons why it should have wide and general acceptance, and why it should become regarded, as soon as possible, as a necessary part of liberal education.

The great problem of those who would have organized society keep pace with the sciences and arts lies in keeping the minds of the masses open to the reception of new ideas...we must fix the minds of the young, to use a paradox, so that they will always be changeable.

Perhaps Doctor Pearce's most famous publication was *Tales that Dead Men Tell*, published in 1935 as *University of Texas Bulletin No. 3537*. This little volume is a discourse on the place of archeology among the humanities. It contains a brief outline of world prehistory as it was known at the time. Doctor Pearce eloquently stated how the findings of archeology supplement historical records,



Cover to *Tales that Dead Men Tell*.

and he decries the looting of the archeological record by amateur diggers.

### Tributes

The best insight into the work of Doctor Pearce is found in the tributes by those who knew him best, at the time of his death. Dr. Gilbert McAllister, who may have known Pearce most intimately, said:

Professor J. E. Pearce, of the Department of Anthropology, died at his home in Austin on October 22 [1938], in his seventieth year. His contribution to our discipline has been, not in numerous publications, but in building a department of anthropology, and envisioning a great state museum. Against the odds of prejudice, suspicion and overt antagonism from many sources, he founded a department when anthropology was little recognized and hardly respectable. That

such a department exists is mute evidence of his untiring efforts, his fearless and courageous fight for what he believed to be a source of truth, tolerance, and enlightenment. Men of lesser determination and energies would have despaired.

A tribute in *The Alcalde*, prepared by Roy Bedicheck and James Hart, said in part:

James Edwin Pearce was born in Roxboro, North Carolina, October 7, 1868, and died in Austin, Texas, October 22, 1938, thus fulfilling, with a few days to spare, his three score and ten. Reared on a farm in Hunt County, Texas [from the age of three], he came to the University of Texas as a freshman in 1890. The name of J. E. Pearce connotes anthropology; and the word anthropology brings before our mind's eye the features of our lost friend. We believe that he earned, and future generations should acknowledge and accord him, the title, Father of Texas Anthropology. When he began his investigations thirty years ago, Texas was not conscious of having within its borders a primitive culture. At the time of his death he had under supervision four different and quite extensive field expeditions (and four laboratories) reclaiming the physical remains of primitive cultures in Texas. Through his efforts an astounding amount of anthropological and archaeological material has been collected and preserved. His was the work of the pioneer, of exploring, discovering, opening up, conserving, and wandering in the wilderness, so to speak...in order that later generations might enter into the promised land of study, interpretation, and enjoyment of the fruits thereof.

A resolution by the General Faculty, University of Texas, dated February 14, 1939, was signed by Roy Bedicheck, J. Frank Dobie, George C. Engerrand, and C.W. Ramsdell:

During twenty-one years [1917-1938] service at the University of Texas, Professor Pearce, in addition to teaching duties, assembled an extensive collection of archaeological material, established a museum of anthropology, and especially

during the later years of his life worked untiringly in behalf of a Texas State Museum. For thirty years Mr. Pearce was active in exploration work in the field of Texas Anthropology. He began with a pick and shovel in his own hands and ended with four large field expeditions under his supervision reclaiming for the University and for science the physical remains of the prehistoric peoples of Texas. One of his former pupils, Victor Smith of Alpine, has gained national recognition for anthropological work in the Big Bend country, and has begun a very creditable museum of archaeological material in the Sul Ross State Teachers College. It was his overwhelming conviction that it was only through the experience of the human race that the generations of men are to learn the right from wrong ways of living, and he believed that the science of anthropology was constantly revealing this long buried human experience for the enrichment of present and future generations of men. It is for this reason that he gave himself so wholeheartedly to it.

Dr. Pearce's body was taken to San Antonio for cremation.

### WILLIAM CURRY HOLDEN

An interview of Dr. Curry Holden was conducted by Curtis Tunnell on February 10, 1978, at Dr. Holden's home in Lubbock, Texas. In the 1930s, Dr. Holden built three adobe homes, rare in this region, across from the campus in Lubbock. The interview took place in the basement of the main house, which served as Dr. Holden's study. The large room was lined with bookshelves, bespeaking the active research and writing lifestyle of Dr. Holden. Hot tea was served in china cups during the lengthy interview. The Holden "Adobe Row" homes are being nominated to the National Register of Historic Places, and will be preserved by Texas Tech University.

#### Buried City

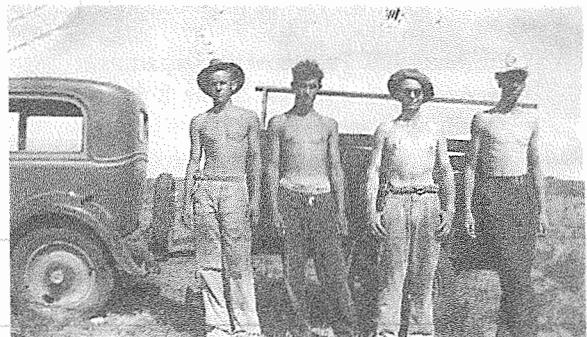
"Yes, I recall my first archeological project very vividly. Let me say that I never had any

formal training in archeology or anthropology. Never even had an hour of it. All of my work was in history with a Government minor.

I was teaching at McMurry College in 1929—well, I helped organize the college in 1923 and taught there with the exception of one year when I took off to finish up my Doctorate Degree at the University of Texas. I came here to Lubbock on June 1, 1929. But in the early spring of '29, [Shortly after the archeological society had been formed in Abilene in October of 1928] one of my old boys that graduated from McMurry and majored in history, had gone up to Perryton and got a job teaching school, teaching Science or something like that. And, along about February, I guess it was, I had a letter from him. And in the meanwhile, I had already contracted to come here to Tech in June, but I was still down there in Abilene.

I had several old boys in my classes that were darn near older than I was. They all called me "Prof" to separate me from the others. The letter ran like this. It said, "Dear Prof: I found a buried city up here on Wolf Creek." Wolf Creek goes into the Canadian River just west of the Oklahoma border. And he says, "Why don't you get some of the boys at Easter time and come up here and let's dig it out?"

Well, my father was a builder, and a buried city appealed to me. And so I found five others and we got two cars and took our bed rolls and some bacon, and so on, and we went up and he carried us out there to this site and it had a little mound about as long as this room is and about half as wide. And so we took spades—and didn't even have a screen with us. We just used big spades and picks.



Curry Holden and his old boys, 1929. West Texas Museum photograph.



And so we tore into it. We found out that it was this slab stone structure, two-room deal of that Canadian River culture that was there probably in about 1300 or 1400. And well, I was interested in it from the standpoint of the type of house that they lived in; and so we cleaned it all out, and stones were still standing on edge, and so on [Holden 1929:23].

And we hadn't even looked for anything else. We just threw that dirt out in every direction, doing immensely more harm than we did good. And so, we dug it out in two days. We should have taken two months. And we went looking for some more and we found three more and we dug them out. We didn't find many artifacts. There wasn't much in there. The pottery they had was just cooking ware. That didn't appeal to us much. Of course, we were looking for arrowheads and things like that. And it was more of a lark for us than anything else.

And so we got ready to go home. Our time was up and one of the old boys had made a mistake and called home to tell them what we were doing, and whoever they talked to had called up the newspaper. And the day we got home, there were headlines that high [about 3 inches], McMURRY PARTY UNEARTH'S BURIED CITY, and it got on the Associated Press and the United Press and went all over the nation. Archeology is front-page stuff, really. Well, they read about that in Lubbock and I had already contracted to come here as Professor of History. At that time, History and Sociology and Philosophy and something else were all one department, headed by one Dr. Granberry, who was very nice and a very scholarly old gentleman and he said, 'Oh, here we have a great archeologist coming to town. We will just put a course of anthropology in to teach.'

So when I got there, I found out that they had in the catalog a course of anthropology and I was going to teach it, and I had never even seen a book on anthropology." [Chuckle.]

### Saddleback Mesa

"We did Saddleback Mesa in the summer of 1933 [Holden 1933]. And I think that is the most constructive thing that I ever did in archeology. If I made a contribution, that is it. We did that work absolutely according to Hoyle. And I had a wonderful crew. These kids had paid their own way.

And, by golly, I had them on the hill at sunup. I'd get them up, even in summer; I had them fed, out, and up there digging. We would dig until about 12:00 and it would be hot, and then we would lay off until about 2:00; and I lectured to them while we were resting. I had to give them credit, you know. And we'd go back and we would stay until sundown. We cleaned that thing out. It had 28 rooms and we made one big mistake on it. We didn't backfill. That was



Newspaper column, "Scientists Seek Ochiltree's Buried City."



Holden's photograph of Saddleback Mesa Ruins.

the biggest mistake. We dumped over the edge of the mesa and—you always make one mistake. Well, that was a whopper.

Some of the walls were standing about three feet tall. They would come out, big slabs like that, filled with dirt and some more dirt and slabs on top. We figured that those rooms were about from five to six feet high and then, no doubt, they had put logs and brush and dirt on top of that. Studer told me about the site. Studer was leading up to working it. The work was done entirely with students. People would come up for the weekends, though, instead of going to the mountains. They thought it was the greatest thing in the world to be invited up. There was an old gravel bed close by.

Now, Saddleback was about half a mile south of the river. And on the north side of the river, there was an old gravel pit that had been worked and they had about five or six little houses that were empty and abandoned and we just moved in and took over there. So I had everybody under shelter. We ate outside under a big tarp spread out. We cooked our meals over a campfire. I think, on that site, we had about 28 students. We were screening things and after I got going, we didn't leave one pot undug. We dug everything and we recorded everything. We took pictures. We did everything we could do within our means.

Now I'll tell you the importance of that season. We dated that slabstone culture. Up to that time, Studer—who, by the way, as a boy, went on the expedition with that first man [Moorehead] that came out here in about 1908. Studer, as a kid, lived at Canadian and he was a professional pack rat when he was a kid, but he fell in with Moorehead and just attached

himself to him. I think he was 11 years old. And since that summer, he was scouting all the way up and down the Canadian and the little creeks that came in, that's the reason Studer knew so much about the area. Studer had developed a real scientific approach and interest in archeology.

And it was he who did a great deal to protect those ruins from being vandalized. Only thing about it, he wasn't protecting that one that we ruined down on Wolf Creek. But he knew where there were over 125 different sites. And he let us in on his two best ones. Which was Saddleback and Antelope Creek. Well, anyway, Studer had a theory that this

culture dated about the 5th Century. Well, at Saddleback ruin, we found intrusive pottery from the Pueblos. I guess there weren't over 12 or 15 sherds. But when we ended the season we knew those sherds were found right with the local stuff. And we did know that they were intrusive ware.

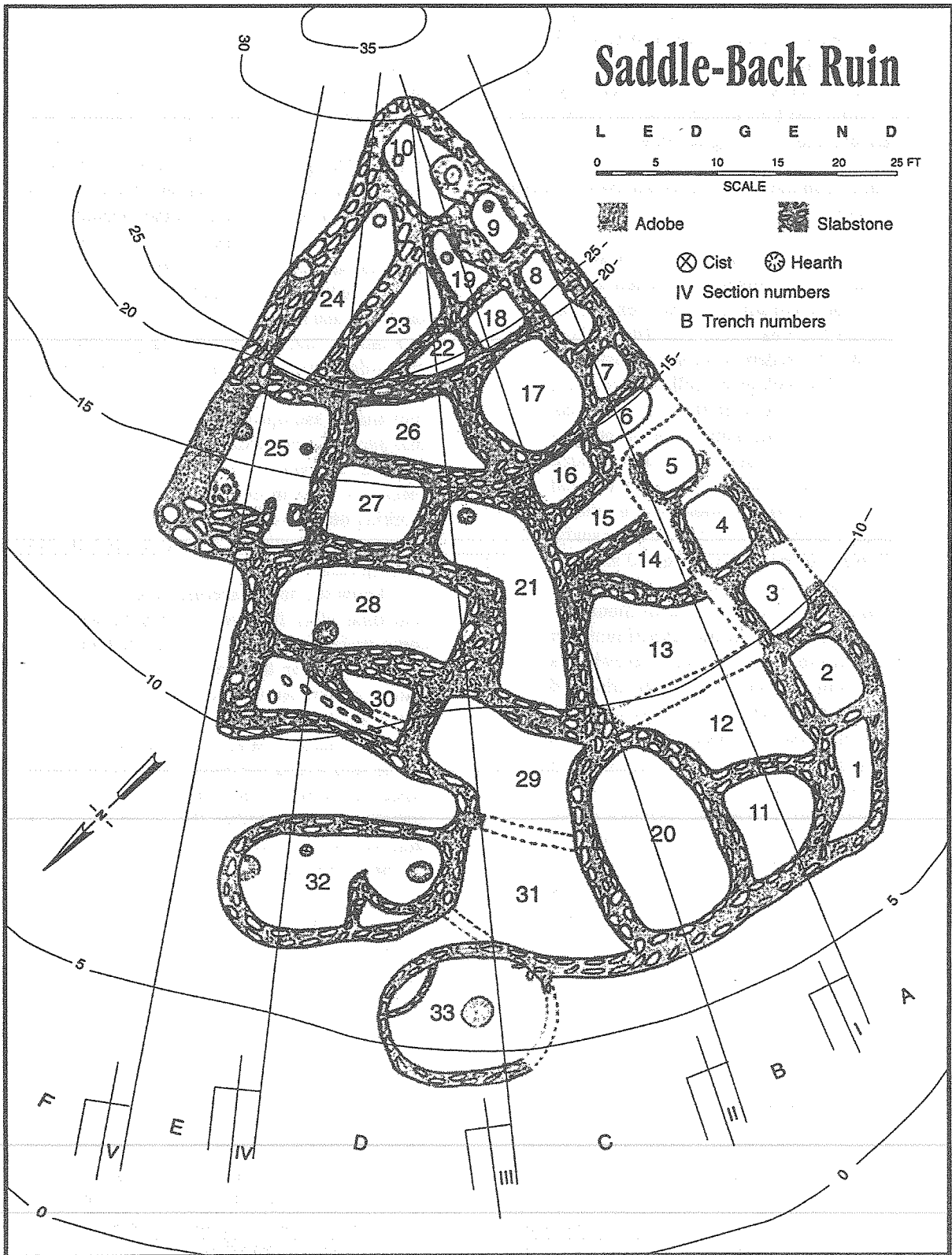
Well, in New Mexico at that time, they had just finished and were operating The Laboratory of Anthropology. And they had just worked-up a tree ring dating system. They had just completed that. And so at the end of our dig, I did what I always did: I worked the life out of these kids for about a month and then I would take a last week and take them on a tour of the Indian country, through the Navajo reservation, and through all the Pueblos. We'd camp out. It didn't cost us anything. I fed those kids for 33 cents a day apiece.

We could take these trips, you know, and usually had good luck because it didn't rain out there. We would camp out and they sure did like that.

Well, when we finished that dig that summer, we went directly to Santa Fe. We took our stuff out to the laboratory and in 30 minutes, they had it dated. We were in business. This was intrusive ware and it dated about 1350. In other words, Studer was off, you see, about 600 years. And so that date has been accepted and not his. That's the one contribution I think I have made to Southwestern archeology: Dating the slabstone culture on the Canadian River.

They were pretty poor people. They did have those permanent houses and they raised corn. They were farmers. They came from the east and got that far up the river and had very little contact with the Pueblos. And they were far





Plan of Saddleback Ruin prepared by Holden, West Texas Museum.

more akin to the cultures to the east than they were to the Pueblos. Their house structure, everything they had was different; but they were farmers. We found their burned corncobs. They just farmed little spots around in the valley; they were not farmers in a big way. But they did raise corn—ain't no doubt about it. They also hunted and did a little agriculture."

An article in the *Amarillo Globe News* for Sept. 29, 1932 says:

An unidentified race whose advent and departure are unknown reached a high state of civilization in the Texas Panhandle 600 years ago. The date is fixed by W. C. Holden professor of history at Texas Technological College, Lubbock, who with a party of students has excavated two of the many ruins in the Panhandle. It was announced after Holden had removed some of the pottery found in the ruins to the laboratory of anthropology at Santa Fe, N. M., for close study. These people lived in large and substantial communal houses, built of stone, maintained a settled order of municipal life, and made various experiments in agriculture. Their knives, arrowheads and skin scrapers made from flint and their many bone artifacts were far superior to those of later Plains Indians, Holden said. They smoked pipes of soap-stone and pottery construction. Their many ornaments included inlaid turquoise objects from the mines south of Santa Fe, N. M. and shell beads from the Pacific coast. Buffalo meat was the chief source of food, but they also ate deer, antelope, bear, and turkey. They grew corn on small subirrigated tracts along the streams.

#### Texas Archeological Society

Holden continues:

Now, old Judge Simms down at Paint Rock, he got his name by being county judge and had a ranch there in that county. He was one of our early members of the [Texas] Archeological Society—and incidentally, his interest was only in those paintings, but he made a very valuable member of the Association. He and another old

boy down at San Angelo who was a contractor or something—but, anyway, they had a layman's interest.

And early on we got to having these yearly [TAS] meetings and started meeting around the area. Well, those meetings were really something. They weren't like ordinary meetings...the bull sessions that would take place the night before...The papers—now they had papers—the people just endured that and then enjoyed the rest of it. And sometimes they would meet even a day early so they could have plenty of time for bull sessions. [Chuckle.]

The old Judge would always arrive a good day early and he would rent two or three rooms at a motel. And this was during prohibition—and, I don't know where he got it—but he always brought about two cases of liquor with him and he had open house all during the time that they were not actually reading papers.

And so, people looked forward to these meetings. And most of these old boys were working on a shoestring like we were and they would arrive with their bedrolls and in old beat-up cars.

I know we had a meeting here in Lubbock one time after I moved in this house. And there must have been 15 or 20 of them that made this their headquarters and the back yard was just full of bedrolls. You would look out at that back lot and you would just have to hop over them to get across the yard; and some in the house and the Judge with open house wherever he was. Those meetings were really something. I remember the second meeting that we had here was after we got two stories on the old museum.

You see, we had the basement for 14 years and we finally got the other two stories on. After we got that, we had, I guess, the second meeting here in Lubbock. And it was on the campus where you weren't supposed to serve any alcoholic drinks at all. Well, that bothered us a great deal about how to keep the boys there from drinking.

We didn't have anything in the north room, but later we turned it into the Hall of Earth and Man. We had nothing in there, so we held our meeting in there. We got a table and got two big punch bowls about this big around [two feet across] and we had two people in the society that were tee-totalers. Floyd Studer—and I have forgotten who the other one was—but everybody else would drink like a salmon. [Chuckle.]

And I remember Ted Sayles was there. And we went in and we had what we called the Baptist punch and, on the other end, we had the Episcopalian punch. And those who would come in—we would tell them—somebody would just casually say: ‘That is Baptist punch there and Episcopalian punch there.’

Well, Floyd Studer was a big Baptist, so he just made a dive for the Baptist end. And it was just as harmless as it could be with orange juice and some other stuff in it.

But the Episcopalian punch, I concocted that in a little kitchen that we had up there and I put about three cans of orange juice—oh, about a quart and a half, and one whole bottle of tequila, Old Lasso tequila. It made a pretty good mixture.

And soon, everybody except Studer and his compatriot whoever he was, had joined Ted Sayles down at the Episcopalian end. Ted never got five feet away from that and he got as high as a kite. And, I think, I would take the bowl off and fill it up about every thirty minutes and I think I filled that up about four or five times.

Well, then the Society got a big membership and they began to hold the meetings down in Dallas. And I went to one meeting down in Dallas and it was a cold water affair. Something had happened to Judge Simms and nobody would take his place and all they did was have papers and sat around and talked shop. And that was the last meeting I went to.

There was also Colonel M. L. Crimmins. The Colonel, he was a professional joiner. He would join anything. Very distinguished looking old fella. And the most exciting thing that he ever did—I don’t know if you would call that scientific—he was one of the first ones that went through Santa Elena Canyon in boats. And they lost all their equipment and nearly lost their lives. He never did get tired of telling about it. They finally got through, but they lost a thousand dollars’ worth of cameras and all kinds of equipment.

The old Colonel never missed a meeting, and he added a sort of touch of respectability. He was always rather distinguished looking, always dressed very formally and everything. But he could be pretty much one of the fellows. I don’t remember that he was here when we had Episcopalian punch. If he had been, he would have been right there by Ted. He was a retired colonel and I think he had been in the Cavalry and he liked adventure. He enjoyed

the adventure of archeology. Archeology is sort of adventurous.

And there was Rupert Richardson. Rupert never—I don’t guess he ever picked up an arrowhead or never had a spade in the sand unless it was working in the yard. He just lent his presence, you might say. He was really running the West Texas Historical Association, but he was in on the organization of the Archeological Society and, I suppose, he is still a dues paying member. But he never attended the meetings and never did really work.

You want to get the low-down on all of these old boys; and that is one thing I am good on, is low-downs. [Chuckle.]”

### • E. B. “TED” SAYLES •

In the spring of 1965, I flew out to Tucson to negotiate with Ray Thompson at the Arizona State Museum for the transfer of the Sayles Collection to the University of Texas. Ted Sayles met me at the airport and I was shocked by his appearance. He was sun-tanned, vigorous, and vital and gave the impression of a man much younger than his years. We had dinner together and immediately established rapport between us. He was warm and friendly, with a sharp mind and good sense of humor. He spent considerable time telling me about his early adobe home in the “Old Town” area of Tucson. He had lived in the house for many years and was distressed that it was threatened by urban renewal efforts of the city. He had been waging a long fight to preserve the house and obviously was ready to confront the bulldozer at the gate if necessary.

After initial discussions with Ray Thompson at the Museum, and examination of the extensive Sayles Texas materials, Ted decided that I should see Emil Haury’s work that was underway at Snaketown. Ted was involved in some of the early excavations at Snaketown back in the early 1930s (Gladwin et al. 1937). The next day we drove out in Ted’s old car and Haury and his crew gave us the deluxe tour of the site and the lab. The scale of the Snaketown excavations was reminiscent of WPA projects in Texas. In some areas they were excavating features and floors from beneath trash middens 3 meters in depth. At the lab they were processing the larger decorated sherds from the excavations. They took us out behind the lab and showed us the discard pile where sherds were

dumped after documentation, and it resembled a small, actively growing, volcanic cone. There were literally many cubic meters of decorated sherds from Snaketown and we were invited to fill our pockets, but we declined.

The following day Ted took me to his research area in the corner of a large room at the museum. He had extensive documentation laid-out on a tributary of the Brazos River near Abilene, Texas [see Sayles 1929]. He and a geologist had done extensive mapping of terrace deposits along the stream many years ago, including careful cross-sections of the valley and even a linear transect down several miles of the stream. Ted was eager to find an archeologist in Texas who would work with him on doing a detailed archeological survey of the stream valley to try and associate sites with particular terrace deposits. His research interest obviously had not declined.

In the evenings, Ted and I would sip a few very dry martinis (which were his favorite) and “talk about old times.” He told stories of doing his Archeological Survey of Texas (Sayles 1935) on a

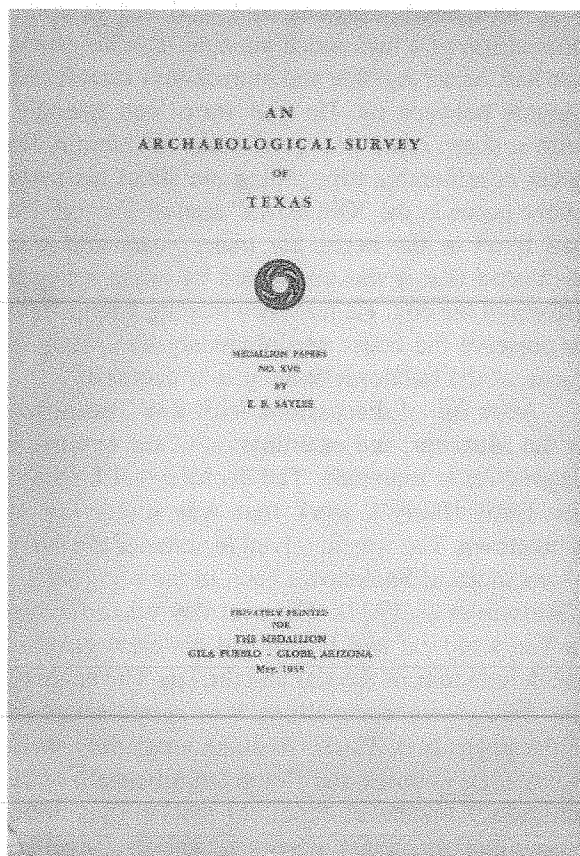
meager shoestring, and he gave me a photo of him and a companion beside his old Model-A Ford at the start of the work. He told of making a boat trip, as a young man in 1913, down the Colorado River from south of Abilene to Austin, and examining archeological sites all along the way (see Mothershead 1981:254).

Of all the things Ted Sayles was involved in during my visit, his primary passion obviously was for his work with children in the Museum and for his writing of a series of children’s books based on archeological findings. In 1960 he and a colleague published a fine volume called *Throw Stone: The First American Boy, 25,000 Years Ago* (Sayles and Stevens 1960). It traces the life of a young boy who was a member of the first group to move from Asia into North America and hunt mammoths. Ted had subsequently prepared a second volume, *Little Cloud and the Great Plains Hunters, 15,000 Years Ago*, which was ready for publication in 1962 (Sayles and Stevens 1962). Huckell et al. (1997) provide a very detailed sketch of the life and career of Ted Sayles.

### The Early Years

Edwin Booth “Ted” Sayles was born on May 14, 1892 in Abilene, Texas. After graduation from High School, he and a friend made a seven-week float trip down the Colorado River in a 16 foot canvas-covered canoe. They carried a tent, cots, blankets, change of clothing, cooking utensils, guns, fishing tackle, cameras and film, and a little food. They left Ballinger on June 21, 1913. Ted kept a journal that describes the wildlife, flora, and landscapes of a wild river, little changed by civilization. They often went more than a week without seeing another human. Ted’s camera caught giant trees, high limestone cliffs, swift rapids, and fields of wildflowers. They explored tributary rivers like the Concho and San Saba, and searched for pearls in the river mussels. Finally after seven weeks on the river, they came ashore at Deep Eddy in Austin. Ted found a job in Austin, and attended the University of Texas for the next year. This trip set Ted off on a life of adventure that would lead him all over the Southwest and northern Mexico, and initiate his avocational interest in photography.

Ted helped organize the Seventh Texas National Guard in Abilene, and in September 1917, he was promoted to First Lieutenant. Ted married



Cover of Sayles' *An Archeological Survey of Texas*.

Gladys Cheatham in January 1918, and a few months later was shipped to France where he was soon in the thick of World War I. He was promoted to Captain and commended for gallantry in action. He also was awarded the French Croix de Guerre. Ted's journal, illustrated with sketches, documents all of his war experiences. His eloquence is reflected in comments like this: "Along a hill to the east of town stood a long row of wooden crosses with dirt freshly piled in mounds in front of them. 'The war's over for them,' our truck driver said. I didn't answer, but I was wondering how many more crosses there would be before it would be over for the rest of us."

During the decade of the 1920s, Ted worked in the family real estate business in Abilene, but his interest in archeology was flourishing during this time and he spent many days searching the countryside for sites, with Dr. Cyrus Ray and young Carl Chelf. By 1931 the Depression was raging and the real estate business was dead. So Ted decided to make a courageous career change into his real love...archeology.

#### Archeological Survey of Texas

Some might wonder why the Sayles' Survey of Texas was done under the auspices of Harold Gladwin and the Gila Pueblo of Arizona. On November 18, 1931, Ted Sayles wrote to Mrs. Quillin of the Witte Museum in San Antonio:

Carl [Chelf] and I want to thank you and Mr. Quillin for the opportunity of seeing the Museum in a way that is not open to the public generally...I have outlined and enclosed herewith a plan for the archeological work I spoke to you about. In the event you should find it convenient to carry out the work you have in mind, any suggestions that I might make are made strictly because of my interest in this work. It is now possible for me to secure a leave from my business. It may be that I will never have another opportunity, so naturally I am anxious to take it. I am confident that the results will amply justify the expense. In the event you believe it would be possible to carry it out, I would be glad to return to San Antonio at any time and discuss this with you further.<sup>2</sup>

Sayles continues:

The cost of carrying on such a survey to completion, which would likely require a year to cover the entire state, would not exceed \$3,000.00, including all excavation necessary to assure a collection of representative specimens. This included \$150.00 per month for Sayles salary and expenses including use of his automobile and all field equipment, \$50.00 per month for expendable supplies, and \$600.00 total salary cost for excavating type sites in each region. [What a bargain!]

Alas!, the Witte Museum, perhaps because of the onset of the Depression, declined to finance the Sayles survey, and he turned to the Gladwins' at the Gila Pueblo in Arizona. In December 1931 arrangements between Sayles and Gladwin were completed and his Archeological Survey of Texas began in January 1932. During that year, Sayles and his companions Juan Holguin, Carl Chelf, J. Charles Kelley, and Charles Renfroe, recorded some 1,054 sites, did excavations at several localities and amassed important research collections which are now stored at TARL in Austin.

#### Texas Archeological Society

Many people think of Cyrus Ray when they think of the beginnings of the Texas Archeological Society back in 1928, but Ted Sayles was equally, if not more responsible for the birth of that



Ted Sayles (right) and Juan Holguin in camp during Archeological Survey of Texas, 1932. Field equipment included a Model A Ford, army tent, Coleman stove, card table, and guard dog "Happy." Photograph by Carl Chelf.

organization. An article in the *Abilene Reporter* for October 5, 1928 says:

Most people walk out into the country ...for the pleasure they get out of viewing the scenery, or drinking their fill of fresh air. A few of them, perhaps one in a thousand, take the same sort of excursion for the purpose of picking up arrowheads, spotting ancient campsites, or rummaging in gravel pits or stream beds in search of stone implements or bones which belonged to the long ago. These latter are called archaeologists—seekers after relics of dead peoples. Organization of the West Texas Archeological Society in Abilene the other night was a good thing. Members of the society have already uncovered enough artifacts to show that the territory now known as Taylor and adjoining counties was once popular with the Indians as a dwelling place. The West Texas Archeological Society should be welcomed to the ranks of worthwhile organizations.

A day later, on October 6, 1928, Ted Sayles wrote George C. Engerrand at the University of Texas:

We have undertaken the organization of an archeological [Sayles never used the second "a" in archaeology] society for this section of the State, having in view that the whole state will eventually become organized and that groups in various localities, such as those interested here in Abilene, will be formed into local chapters of the state organization. We have about 20 in Abilene who will become members, drawn largely from the local colleges.

On the 17th of October, 1928, Sayles wrote to Doctor Pearce:

You will recall that some correspondence has passed between us with reference to the organization of an Archeological Society for Texas. I have also written to Mr. Engerrand along the same line, as I am now taking some work with him. While I have heard nothing definitely from you, I

feel confident that you are in sympathy with such an organization, having for its objects the association of parties interested in studying the archeology of our State, the preservation of works, monuments, etc., and the gathering of Museum material.

So much enthusiasm has been aroused locally that a number of us here have undertaken such an organization for West Texas. We realize that we have gone into quite an undertaking, particularly in view of the fact that we have nothing to recommend ourselves except our interest in the subject. However, we now have twenty local members, and during the past year I have been in correspondence with more than that number over the state, who appear as interested as any here in Abilene. After the organization is completed, we are sure that its direction will fall into capable hands.

In initiating the organization here we have felt that the Society would eventually become a State association, drawing its members from many sections of Texas, and perhaps surrounding sections. For the time being at least, we are only feeling our way along, and would appreciate any suggestions from you. We would, of course, like very much for you to become associated with our movement, and for the state organization, it occurs to me that by all means you should direct its activities. Is there not someone who would undertake the organization of the eastern part of the State, and then the two sections could unite in one State-wide organization, with local chapters?

As mentioned above, Pearce's response to Sayles on October 22, 1928 was less than enthusiastic, although Pearce did comment that:

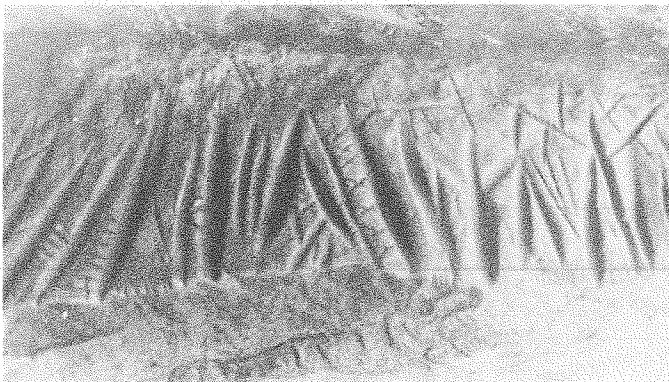
Sometime during the current year I expect to take action looking to the formation of a statewide organization. In the meantime I might find it convenient to meet with your organization and discuss with you the general problems. Please be good enough to inform me if there are stated meetings and regular programs.



The enthusiasm of Sayles for the new society continued unabated, however, and he wrote to Pearce on November 5, 1928:

The response to our organization has been most hearty; in fact, far beyond anything we had hoped for when we undertook the organization for this section. We feel privileged to count as our members Dr. Udden and Professor Engerrand. We now have 37 members, of which about half reside out of Abilene. The organization by you of a State Society is looked for eagerly and I am sure the cooperation will be hearty from all parts of Texas. I have recently learned of an Archeological Society at El Paso, but have not yet got in touch with this organization.

So the Texas Archeological Society was gaining momentum, with Ted Sayles, among others, leading the charge. It would quickly become the statewide organization that Pearce had only dreamed of.



Petroglyphs on Coke County rockshelter, from *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society*, Volume 2, 1930.

### Move to Arizona

Securing a permanent position with the Gladwins at Gila Pueblo and eventually with the Arizona State Museum, Ted Sayles relocated to Tucson where he had a long and productive career (see Huckell et al. 1997:72-80). He did an archeological survey of Chihuahua (Sayles 1936), and learned to love Mexico. He became an accomplished photographer and made many photographic expeditions to various parts of Mexico.

In January 1936, Ted was completing a major excavation at the great site of "Snaketown" near Tucson. He wrote to Carl Chelf:

I am working hard on the Snaketown report [Gladwin et al. 1937]. You can have no idea of our problem until you see the material, etc. Our latest phase we are dealing with is about 1200 AD by cross association of northern intrusive pottery that has been dated. Earlier than this latest phase are some seven more, which we believe might well carry the chronology back to the time of Christ. This will give you some idea of what we have to deal with: Thousands of specimens were recovered and each has to be properly allocated. I have just completed the analysis and description of the utilitarian stone objects and find that I will have, for these alone, more than sixty plates, a dozen or more charts, etc. I am also handling the house types and the cremations, both of which will take up a great deal of space.

When Ted celebrated his 85th Birthday in May 1977, he was still actively researching and writing. "I want to get as much on paper as possible at an early date before a tottering old age catches up." But a week later a massive stroke intervened and he died on May 26, 1977. In compliance with his request, his body was cremated and his ashes were scattered along a deep arroyo in the Arizona desert that he loved.

### CARL CHELF

Carl Chelf, born in 1915, is a name that may not be familiar to a modern generation of archeological enthusiasts, but he was one of the pioneers. Carl was another Abilene boy, and he often told me that while growing up, he spent much more time in Ted and Gladys Sayles' house than he did in his parent's home.

The Sayles always considered Carl to be like their own son, and carried on a lifelong correspondence with him. When Carl married Dorothy Baldwin in 1935, Gladys Sayles wrote to Dorothy:

Dorothy, being a wife is a job all its own, but being an archaeologist wife is a double dose. That may sound queer to you and I really don't mean for it to—for really your life will be very interesting if you are interested in Carl's work. All archies [archeologists] are nutty and you will have to be nutty to the point where you can sleep with skeletons under the bed and eat on one corner of the table, while a bunch of material from a goat cave occupies the place where the turkey should be. You will never have any money. Archies only live on glory, love, and bananas. But what fun you will have. You meet and know the most interesting people—the salt of the earth. Don't ever try to accumulate anything that can't be folded up and rammed into a bedroll, for we always become attached to some silly piece of furniture that will eventually have to be sold or given away. Invest your few extra nickels in good books, nice red flannels, and a good bedroll. Dorothy if Carl doesn't have time to write I wish you would. Really he has been just like a son to us and we love him devotedly. We can hardly wait to know you. [I once purchased from Carl a large matted photograph of Gladys under a cottonwood tree, which was taken by Ted]

Carl was born in 1915, and while just a teenager, he worked with Sayles on the Archeological Survey of Texas. He then came to the University of Texas and studied under J. E. Pearce. Ted wrote to Carl at the University of Texas in April 1934:

I feel quite sure that Mr. Jackson's attitude toward the association of the artifacts with pottery is due to his lack of knowledge...Intrusive articles in a single site have no significance whatever. It looks like shotgun shells have a habit of going almost anywhere. We have just dug up one here on a floor in the ruin that is being excavated [Snaketown]. This was about eight feet below present ground level. I believe that Dr. Kidder got one, or some other similar kind of metal in the Pecos ruin, nearly twenty feet under the ground. It is only the persistent association of artifacts in a number of instances under

similar circumstances (not disturbed by rodents, etc) that can be considered.

In October 1935, Ted wrote Carl: "I also wrote you recently with reference to your sending me some east Texas Caddo sherds, about fifteen pounds more or less, from various sites; preferably from those I visited with you. Can you get these to me? I would appreciate it very much as we should like to have these analyzed; have none on hand for study purpose." During the same month, another letter says: "Can you send me more details about the house site Jackson got? Why in the H\_\_\_ don't they go after more information and lay off pot hunting for awhile? Unless more is published in the near future concerning the field in which Dr. Pearce has spent the last twenty years, its my guess that some one else is going in there mighty soon in order to try and find out how come."

Although Ted and Carl continued to correspond and exchange visits for decades, they never again were able to work together in the field. In December of 1935, Ted wrote Carl:

I would like very much to have you with me during the summer months, but at the present time the work I might offer you does not look to the future. Should at any time you find that Dr. Pearce does not have anything to offer you during the summer months, then I want you to let me know. But whatever connection you may make with me must be of a temporary nature, and your permanent connection remains with Dr. Pearce.

Carl went on to work with A.T. Jackson at the Sanders site up on Red River, some Central Texas



Excavations at the T. M. Sanders site, Lamar County. Carl Chelf, third from left; A.T. Jackson, far right. Carl Chelf photograph.



locales, and several West Texas caves. One of Carl's most notable archeological reports was published with J.W. Davenport on the painted pebbles of the lower Pecos and Big Bend regions of Texas (Davenport and Chelf n.d.). He also published reports on a group burial from Lamar County (Chelf 1939) that was exhibited for decades in the Texas Memorial Museum. Another interesting report in the *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* described grooved clubs from a peat bog in Milam County (Chelf 1946).

Carl Chelf became curator of Anthropology and Geology at the Texas Memorial Museum for a time, and became a lifelong friend of Glen Evans. Eventually, both Carl and Glen went to work for private companies doing exploration for commercially valuable geological deposits. Both of them worked on the Navajo reservation locating uranium deposits in the 1950s. Carl's notebooks from those years are filled with drawings and descriptions of healing ceremonies, and other anthropological observations.

Ted was still going strong in November 1973, when he wrote to Carl:

Just to remind you of the various To-Do's we talked about: Send me your reference to the Cabeza de Vaca accounts and do you know anyone at the University who is actively engaged in his story? Flint choppers—send all you can give me. University publication on the Texas Revolution from the Mexican view point. Your childrens book of European archeology—I would like to have a xerox copy. And send German sausages—preferably some that do not require deep freeze. Hope you can manage a trip to Tucson while our good weather lasts.

During the decades that Carl travelled all over the country prospecting for commercially valuable geological deposits, he was also collecting "good junk." He amassed a house, garage, outbuildings, old warehouse, and an old general store full of an incredible collection. Because of his anthropological bent, Carl was interested in every facet of material culture. He not only collected obvious things like old plows, tools, meteorites, and barber's chairs, but he saw the value in signs (DONT PICK THE BERRIES), fancy letterhead stationery, lots of books, and fruit jars. Dee Ann Story told of visiting



Carl Chelf (left) and Glen Evans in the 1930s. Carl Chelf photograph.

in Carl's home and seeing, on a mannequin, a pair of overalls which had dozens and dozens of large patches, and even patches on some of the patches. When asked, Carl said he had bought them directly off the farmer who was wearing them. Surely the man must have thought him crazy! In his latter years, Carl got great joy out of selling his collection out of the Old 1898 Store in Buda, Texas. He liked the fact that every esoteric item he sold made some collector very happy.

Carl died in 1986, and is buried in Austin.

### J. CHARLES KELLEY

An interview of Dr. J. Charles Kelley was done at the old Tarpon Inn in Port Aransas on May 1, 1981, by Curtis Tunnell. Dr. Kelley's room in the old Inn was only about twice the size of a double bed and had a very noisy window cooler. It was a muggy gulf coast day, but we found it necessary to turn off the air conditioner in order to make the recording. In spite of sweat pouring off his brow, Dr. Kelley told a wonderful array of stories.

"I was born in 1913 in Era, Texas. Later we moved to Balmorhea and I graduated from high school there in about 1930 or '31. In 1931 I started to college at Sul Ross and there I encountered the beginnings of a museum and Victor Smith."

### Victor Smith, Pioneer Archeologist

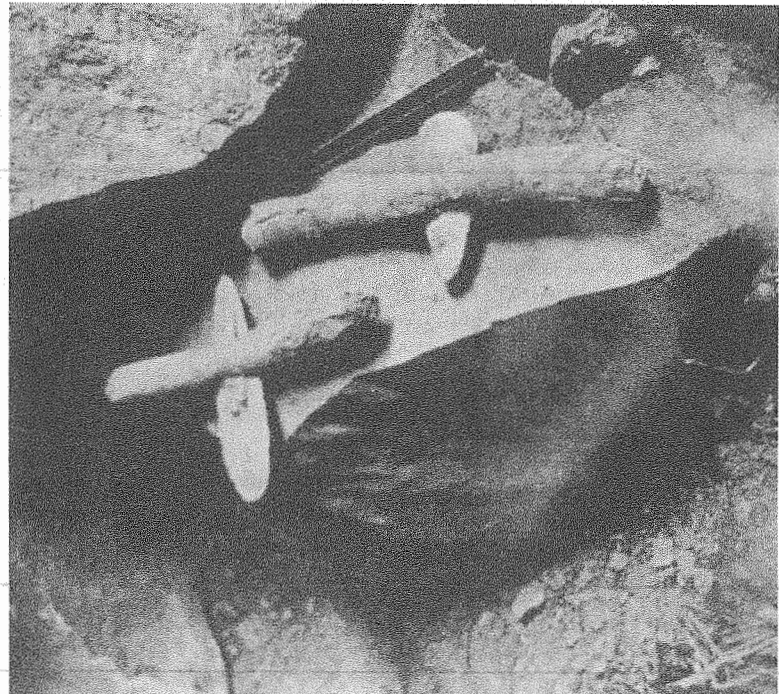
"In terms of pioneer work in Texas archeology, Victor J. Smith is one of the really unsung heroes, because he had begun work there in the Alpine area in the '20s, making collections and recording sites and so on like that [see Tunnell 1992]. He was the Chairman of the Department of Industrial Education. He was a small man, but very vigorous and active and with a very keen, curious brain. He had been educated in part at Columbia University, and he became interested in archeology while he was there. He had no training in archeology as such, but had started doing quite a bit of work and understood the need for care, and careful recording of sites and artifacts and that sort of thing. And he introduced me into archeology, because, finding me day after day studying the museum collections in there, he started talking to me about it. And Ted Sayles had started the Archeological Survey of Texas and had been there and had arranged to provide Victor Smith with a little money to do some work in the rockshelters around Alpine and the Sunny Glenn area, especially.

So he took me out a couple of times, he and Dr. Cottle, head of the Biology Department, to take out mammoth tusks that were eroding from the stream beds around Alpine and got me more and more interested in this sort of thing. And, then, with some of this money he had from Gila Pueblo through Ted Sayles, he started excavations at Carved Rock Shelter at the entrance of Sunny Glenn [Smith 1934, 1938], and I was one of two or three interested students that he took out to work with him at the shelter.

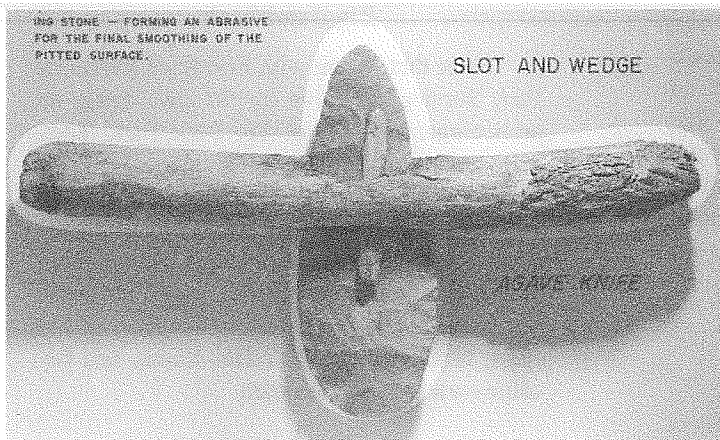
That was my first excavation project. And what, I'm sure, got me the opportunity of continuing on under Smith's sponsorship. We got out to the Carved Rock Shelter and parked the car at the foot of this very high talus slope leading up to a cap rock. This was an old Model T that Victor was famous for driving. When we got there, we had a flat tire. So he said, 'Well, can anybody fix a flat tire?' to the students. And I was the only one that admitted that I could fix a—I mean, not replace a spare tire, but could repair a Model T tire. He didn't have a spare. So I spent the first morning, with the rockshelter right above and everyone else working, fixing the tire for Victor Smith, but he was very pleased with that.

And we had some very interesting work in this Carved Rock Shelter. There were huge boulders that had fallen down onto earlier deposits and then petroglyphs had been carved into these. And there was also something else there, as I will mention in a moment.

One lunch period when we stopped, young and inquisitive, I was fooling around and wandering around and looking at things, and I reached into a crevice between two of these great fallen boulders and pulled out a length of



Hafted knives, Carved Rock Shelter, Brewster County, Texas, found by J. Charles Kelley in the 1930s. Victor Smith photograph, Archives of Big Bend.



Hafted Knife, Carved Rock Shelter, Brewster County, Texas, found by J. Charles Kelley. Courtesy of Arizona State Museum.

sotol stalk about 20 cm or something like that in length, with a flint blade inset into the middle of it. Victor said, 'Where did you find that?' And I said, 'Right in here,' and I reached in and pulled out the second one. Now, those, I understand, are in the University of Arizona museum. Because since they were found with the Gila Pueblo money, they went to Gila Pueblo and then to the Arizona State Museum and were never returned to either Sul Ross or to UT. Oh, they are wonderful specimens, most unique!

Well, it was also in this Carved Rock Shelter that an event occurred between the three of us, Victor Smith, myself, and Juan Colbas, a huge Mexican laborer. Victor Smith and I were working near the back wall of the shelter, and this very long, heavy, thin slab fell on the three of us. Colbas caught it on his back and shoulders and it knocked Victor Smith over at the other end of it and it just scratched me a little bit. Colbas saved our lives!"

### The Sayles Archeological Survey

"Then Victor took me on several other of these projects like this, and the next year I had to lay out of school. I couldn't continue; it was the Depression years, and I couldn't continue with this University work. But late in the spring, Ted Sayles came through again, and he needed an assistant, so I went with Ted Sayles for two months, on Victor Smith's recommendation. It was supposed to be longer than that, but at that age and that stage of immaturity, the long hours and the hard work and the lonesomeness was

too much. So I left him after a little over two months. But in that period, we worked on north and south Llano rivers, especially in the Junction area, and we worked down the Pecos from Fort Lancaster off and on until we got as far as the mouth of the Pecos. And we worked in several rockshelters around the mouth of the Pecos and at the shelter in Mile Canyon near Langtry, which was later known as Eagle Cave. We ran a trench through the upper segments of that deposit, the perishable layers. There was still perishable material at that time.

And then we worked at a site near the mouth of Seminole Canyon. I guess it was the Panther Cave. We did quite a bit of trenching in that site. I had my first attack of cave dust sickness as a result.

And I received the magnificent salary of a dollar a day when we excavated. When we were just doing survey work, well, I had my food and transportation for my bedroll and myself. Ted did the survey on a shoestring. This was all testing work that he was doing. And if larger excavations were involved, he would farm them out to someone like Victor Smith to carry out.

We also worked in a very interesting rockshelter a few miles above Langtry and off the river in Pump Canyon. And this was extremely interesting, because one of the finds there was the bones of an infant bundled in matting that they had buried. They had cut a hole in the fiber deposits from earlier occupations. And had then planted stakes forming sort of a figure-eight around it. And apparently they had put wood above this and tried to cremate it. The stakes were burned down and the fiber was burned, but they had not had enough heat so that the bundle was more or less intact. And that rockshelter also produced perhaps a bushel of cracked, broken up small river walnuts that were a little bit bigger than the tip of your small finger. But these had been crushed so that the goodie could be separated. You could separate them by a water separation technique or something of that nature. So that was the beginning of my work in archeology in Texas—it started with Victor Smith and continued with Ted Sayles.

Ted Sayles was a wonderful guy, and a very astute field archeologist. He had no formal training at all and had started out as an amateur, but he knew what had to be done. He was very careful in recording sites and recording provenience. By covering as much of Texas as he did by this detailed survey work, he was probably the first archeologist to have a really clear grasp of the whole Texas picture."

### New Mexico work

"In the fall of '33 I went to the University of New Mexico, and it was getting quite a lot of WPA money by that time. Frederick Webb Hodge had just been given an honorary degree by the University, and in appreciation for this he had established the Frederick Webb Hodge Ethnohistory Award. It amounted to \$50 or something like that. I submitted a paper which was the first of many editions of my study of the Jumanos. It later formed the basis of my doctoral dissertation at Harvard [completed in 1947, but published as Kelley 1986]. Well, the committee awarded me the prize. By this time I was out at Steamboat Canyon working on the Navajo Project. So I wrote Hodge a letter and thanked him for this award and told him that this had allowed me to grubstake myself for this project.

One day, Von Falkenberg came out hurriedly from Gallup to tell me that Frederick Webb Hodge was enroute to the snake dance at the Hopi towns and was so pleased by my letter that he was stopping by our camp. I was to fix supper for them. He had four ladies with him. So I fixed my camp chili, basic ingredients being canned corn beef, canned green chilies, and canned tomatoes. They loved it, and gorged themselves on it! The result was that they got as far as Keems Canyon, and they were all sick from eating my canned chili concoction. They missed the snake dance entirely! [Chuckle.] I spent a year on the Navajo Project.

When I left that job, I had a little time on my hands, so I went to La Junta and sank a test trench at the Millington site. By sheer luck, I found a stratified deposit that started out with what's now known as the El Paso phase of the Jornada branch...my La Junta focus. And above that was a late prehistoric and contact period [deposit], and then a full mission period section on top."

### Big Bend Park

"After that I went with Eric Reed [National Park Service] to serve for 90 days doing an archeological survey of Big Bend Park. They were getting ready to open it and Ross Maxwell was doing the geology. That was the summer of 1936. We excavated in one rockshelter up in the Chisos basin itself, and found Late Archaic materials overlain by Livermore arrow points in the upper levels. I taught for two years at Sul Ross, brought there by Victor Smith, and became curator in the museum.



Dr. J. Charles Kelley, 1940s. The University of Texas, Anthropology Department, #68.

When school was out that summer, I started out with the students to go south into the Big Bend. As we crossed Sheep Creek above its junction with Calamity Creek, I saw bones projecting from the arroyo bank. Up to that time, we knew of no buried sites in the Big Bend, they were all rockshelters and surface sites. We excavated two intact burials in remarkable good condition. That was the beginning of our work by Kelley, Campbell, and Lehmer [1940].

Peabody Museum proposed that they would put up \$1,000, if Sul Ross would put up \$1,000, and we would investigate this area further. So, Sul Ross agreed. Bullock was president at the time, and he was quite a character. He told me, "Two things I want to tell you...One is that in this work, don't find anything too old, because if you find anything too old, you're going to get people to thinking you're talking about



evolution. And, we don't want that to happen. The second thing that I want to tell you is that you may have worked yourself out of a job by doing this. If this is as important a find as you say it is, why, we may need an important person here to do it, so we may have to let you go and get somebody else!'

I surveyed arroyos over a huge area of the Trans Pecos and found buried sites almost everywhere that I looked. I can go through those same arroyos now, and can't find anything. Lateral cutting has destroyed practically everything. Then with the coming of summer, Tom Campbell came out and joined the party as Harvard's representative. And Don Lehmer was one of the people that I brought in on it from New Mexico.

Then that fall, an opportunity developed for WPA funding for work in the Presidio area. So we developed a WPA project in excavating the Millington site [Kelley 1939]. This was one of the largest La Junta Pueblos. Using dates for El Paso Polychrome and Chihuahua Polychrome trade sherds, I was delighted that it probably was first occupied sometime during the 1100s or 1200s. And then there was a change to a culture that lasted into the contact period that shows strong Plains affiliations. There are pithouses, which are circular structures with rows of posts around the periphery and four posts in the center. Late in the first week of excavations, with a team of about 12 Mexicans, I had a telegram from Don Lehmer saying, 'Come down at once. The situation is impossible. Pit houses in every trench.' And this was true. There were cross-sections of pit houses in every stratigraphic trench that had been cut. So we stopped our original plan and started clearing pit houses."

### WPA Projects

"Well, that brings us up through 1939 and the end of my work at Sul Ross, not the end of my work in West Texas, but the end of my work at Sul Ross. From Sul Ross, I went back to the University of New Mexico. Then in the spring of 1940, Tom Campbell wrote me about the statewide Texas WPA Project and offered me a job. I worked excavating the Sandy Creek site, in what's now Lake Travis, and then the Heffington site further down the river and the Greele site [41BT1] up near the mouth of the

Pedernales river. And then the shadow of the approaching war terminated the WPA project, but Texas kept me on working in the laboratory at old Little Campus."

An article in the Austin paper in 1939 said:

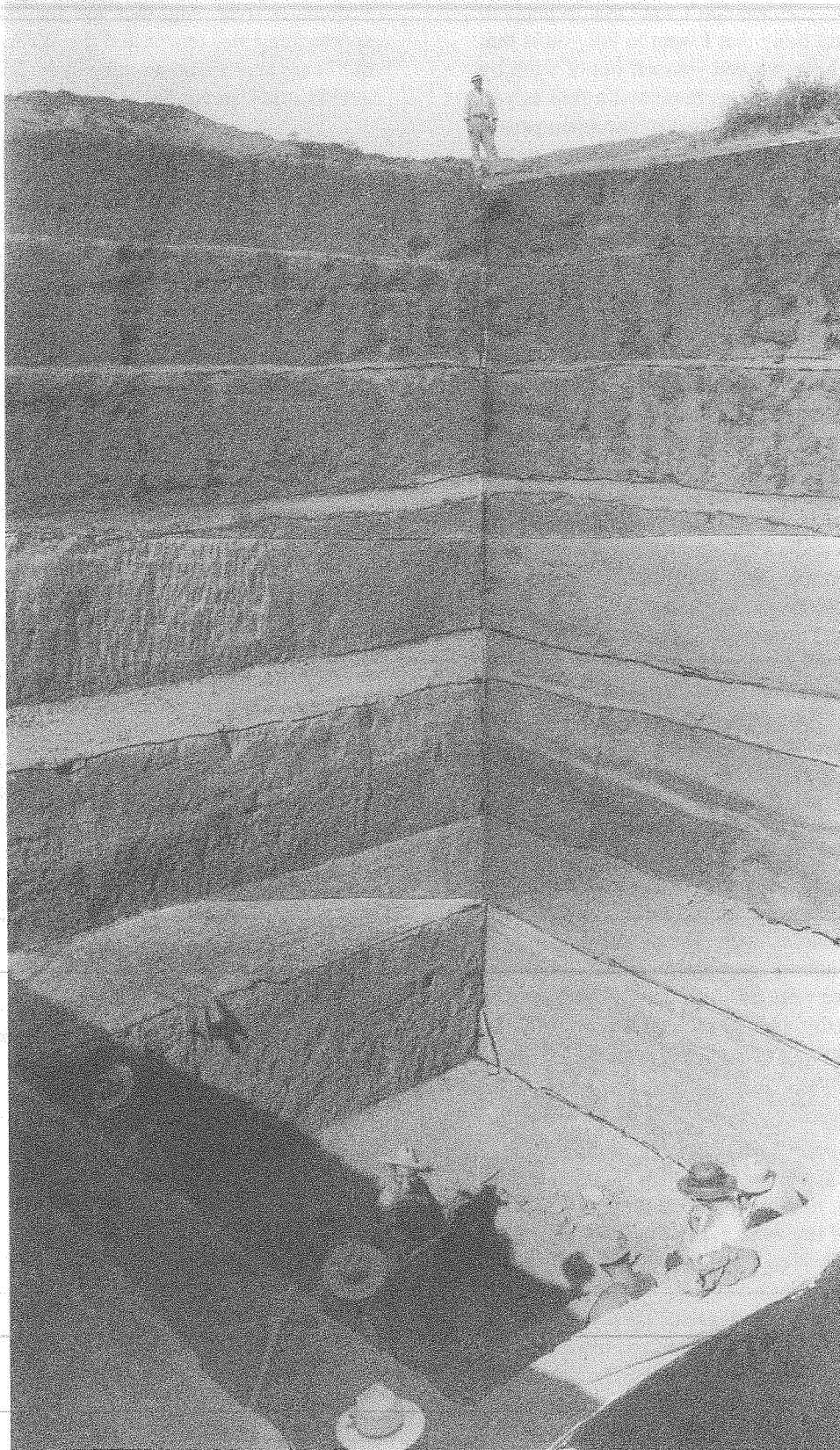
University of Texas scientists yesterday were examining a pile of Indian artifacts—perhaps the oldest yet uncovered in Texas—scooped up from the greatest depth the archeologist's shovel has reached in the State. These relics, arrowheads, grinding stones, and projectile points, were taken from the banks of the Colorado River in Travis County at levels down to thirty feet below the earth's surface in a dig closed last week because of ground water. Perfect geological stratification of the river terraces from which the artifacts were taken accounts for the unusual significance this collection of objects has for the scientist, J. Charles Kelley, field supervisor, said. Location of this dig was on Mrs. Wiley Williams place, twenty-two miles northwest of Austin on the Colorado River. The dig soon will be inundated by water from the Lower Colorado River Reclamation Project.

Kelley continues:

"During World War II, Kluckhohn wrote and asked if I wanted to come to Harvard, so I of course said yes. After a short tour in the Army, Gilbert McAllister offered me an assistant professorship at Texas, which I took immediately. The first two or three years after the war was teaching, teaching, teaching.

Then in '49, I took a University of Texas field school down to work for the summer at Polvo, and it was a great disaster. The weather was godawful, the heat was terrible, and the wind was incredible. The first site that we dug, we found nothing. Ed Jelks came down with the dust sickness while working on an open site. It was a general fiasco. Later that year with a grant from the Latin American Institute, I did survey work along the Rio Conchos and into the Sierra Madre Occidental.

Well, in 1950, I got this offer from Southern Illinois University for something like a 40 percent increase in salary, immediate tenure, full



WPA excavations in deep silt terrace on the Colorado River above Austin. Courtesy of TARL, CT-MS-23.

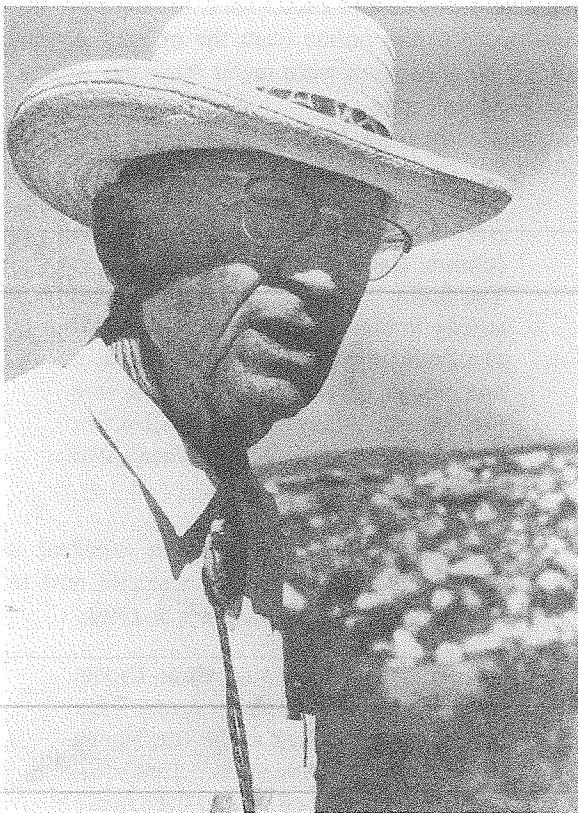
professorship, and directorship of the museum. That was the end of my stay in the State of Texas.”

While Kelley was at Harvard, Alex D. Krieger was still at the University of Texas, and they carried on an active and cordial correspondence in which they affectionately addressed each other as “Alexis,” “Lieber Kelleystein,” “Alexanovitch,” “Kelley old thing,” etc. Kelley was often asking Krieger to take photos of certain specimens and send them to him, or find certain papers or objects and mail them. Krieger patiently complied with every request. Unfortunately, their friendship ended in the 1950s.

J. Charles Kelley died in December 1997 in Alpine, Texas and was cremated.

### FLOYD V. STUDER

Floyd Studer was born on a ranch in the Canadian River Valley on July 3, 1892. In March, 1907, T. L. Eyerly took Studer and other students of the



Floyd Studer at the Alibates Flint Quarries which he explored in the 1920s. Photograph courtesy of the Panhandle Plains Historical Museum.

Canadian [Texas] Academy, on an expedition to excavate some ruins known as “The Buried City” which they assumed might be Spanish in origin. They went to work with picks and shovels and found pottery, flint artifacts, animal bones and carbonized corncocks, and they realized that they had discovered the remains of a prehistoric Indian culture. Professor Eyerly (1907, 1908) published several small articles in 1907 and 1908 concerning The Buried City expedition. That experience molded Studer into a devoted avocational archeologist for the remainder of his life. Eventually, Studer would find and record over 225 ruins and other Indian sites in the Canadian Valley.

In 1914, Studer guided Dr. Walter Fewkes of the Bureau of American Ethnology to sites in the region. Then in 1919, Dr. Warren K. Moorehead of the Phillips Academy in Andover, Massachusetts came to visit the Canadian ruins with Studer. He returned with students for five summer excavation projects in the ruins and established a long relationship with Floyd Studer.

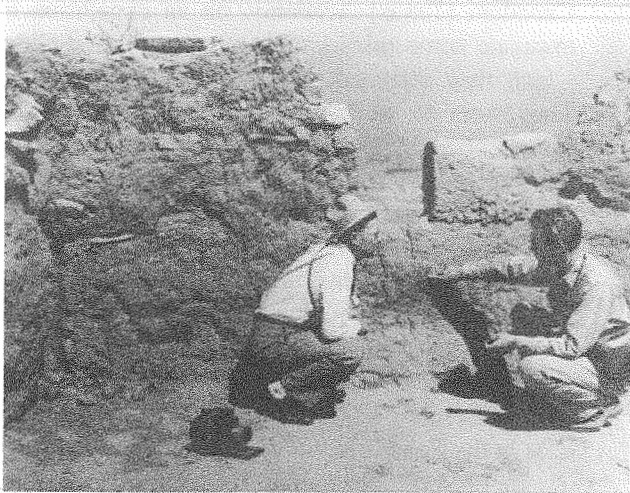
#### Warren K. Moorehead Correspondence

In a letter from Studer to Moorehead dated January 3, 1927, he says:

While you were in Canadian several years ago excavating the ruins on Wolf Creek, you gave me some post card photographs of some Indian Pictographs, which I believe were found by you on the Lee Bivins ranch near Amarillo. I am wondering if you will be good enough to let me know as nearly as you remember where you found these Indian writings.

Then on July 22, 1929 he reported to Moorehead:

Yesterday I was out on the Pat Landergin Ranch. The particular ruins I visited were fifteen miles due north of Vega, Texas, close to the Canadian River. These ruins may have been visited by you, yet somehow I doubt it. The ruins are located on an unusually high mesa [the Landergin Mesa site], or the flat top of an isolated peak. They show evidence of long habitation. Have done no excavating, but have picked up many artifacts, perhaps more than at any other one place I have visited.



Studer, left, at one of the slab house ruins in the Panhandle, 1930s. Courtesy of the Panhandle Plains Historical Museum.

Studer was doing considerable excavation as well as surveying and recording sites. In a letter dated August 28, 1929, he told Moorehead:

I have done much work in the last few years, particularly reconnaissance work. Have done only a small amount of excavating. Have found many, many flint objects from the different sites. Everything, however, has been on the furnace, but I can assure you I have every piece numbered in a manner I can tell exactly from where it came. I am enclosing a piece of matting found on the third floor level from the surface of one of the rooms of the Alibates or Bivins ruin on Alibates Creek...Incidentally, this charred matting appears to cover the entire floor. Incidentally, Dr. Moorehead, I believe I am now in a position to gather for you certain data in a correct manner, should you care to call on me for some such service anytime in the future.

In an interesting letter dated January 6, 1930, Studer first makes mention of Dr. Holden who had dug at the Buried City with "his old boys" the previous year. He also documents calling the Alibates quarry to the attention of the famous geologist Charles N. Gould:

It was mighty nice of you to make the changes you did in the Preface. While I

really didn't intend for you to take Dr. Holden's name out completely, I thought perhaps it could be arranged in some way that his name not be linked with mine. Incidentally, I have more evidence than ever, and more reasons to believe that Dr. Holden is a really fine gentleman, but that his ideas in archaeology are not in my opinion in keeping with the generally accepted practice. I have been in correspondence with Professor Chas. N. Gould for several months. In fact, I invited him to visit the agatized dolomite quarry that showed so much evidence of a primitive mine. While Dr. Gould has worked considerable in this country, I don't know that I showed him anything new unless it was this one location. A definite date was set with Dr. Gould and Dr. Nusbaum, but it was necessary for me to be in Chicago. I did ask a friend of mine to take Dr. Gould and his party out to the quarries I considered significant.

During this important visit to the Alibates Quarries, Nusbaum and Gould established for the first time that many of the points from the original Folsom site in New Mexico were made from the Alibates silicified dolomite.

On October 20, 1930 Studer wrote Moorehead:

I have spent more time on the old Lee Bivins site on Alibates, and on the Johnson Ranch site on Antelope Creek. The Bivins site work has been confined strictly to one room where I went down to a depth of nine feet below the surface, and which, by the way, yielded five floors, perhaps they cannot be called five floor levels, but they are at least five distinct polished clay floors.

Several years before Holden worked at Saddleback Mesa, Studer tested the site and reported to Moorehead on November 8, 1930:

In keeping with your suggestion I spent one full half day with a strong back school boy this week at the site known as Saddle Back Mountain...I first measured the refuse heap, and find it exactly four feet thick at its deepest part, and will average three feet deep...and is located on the northwest slope of Saddle



Back Mountain. I have taken several photographs of the heap, as well as pictures of the ruins, which are located on top of the Mountain. I believe you understand this is the place where I found five or six pieces of colored pottery, although the colored pottery was found on the surface...I dug a test trench four feet long, three feet wide and five feet and five inches deep in the corner of one of the rooms, screening every shovel full. Found numerous hide scrapers, several beautiful bird points, one beautifully decorated bone implement, four inches long with eighteen grooves or notches in it, and an unusual amount of broken deer, turkey and other bones. I consider this ruin significant, not because of its size, because there is likely not more than six or eight rooms in it, but because of its accessibility, and because of the colored pottery found. [See Holden's description above, of dating the ruin with trade sherds]

On November 14, 1930, Studer writes Moorehead:

Dr. Holden, so far as I know does not know where Alibates Creek ruins are. I have never shown them to him...The preliminary paper of yours dated September 1, 1920 got in the hands of Dr. Holden, who knew that the paper came from my hands, and knew of my activities in Northwest Texas. Dr. Holden promptly set out with his boys to Antelope and Tar Box Creek, and according to newspapers, the clippings I still have, he announced he had found heretofore undiscovered ruins, and the matter got a lot of newspaper publicity. The article stated that Dr. Holden and his party were the first to visit these ruins, although you had visited them many years previously, and following that I had visited them many times, which of course, was years before Dr. Holden knew of ruins of any kind being in this country. Dr. Holden claims that he did not instruct all this newspaper publicity, but that a reporter in Abilene, Texas took advantage of him, and wrote these various articles without his consent. While I want to

consider Dr. Holden my friend, and I will continue to cooperate with him so long as he will take one ruin at a time and completely excavate it, but I certainly will not cooperate with him, or anyone else, if they will very hurriedly go to some ruin, scratch around on top, dig a few holes, and then abandon it and go after a new one.

An *Amarillo Globe News* article dated March 4, 1934 says:

Dr. Warren K. Moorehead, dean of American Archaeologists, while in Canyon recently, stated that from the point of view of archaeological studies, the Panhandle of Texas was a strategic center. Asked the extent of the area in which this peculiar Panhandle Culture existed, Dr. Moorehead and Floyd Studer, Amarillo Archaeologist, were agreed that the eastern boundary of the Panhandle of Texas and the Eastern boundary of New Mexico marked the limits of the land in which these early people lived. Dr. Moorehead said that no one knew the number of these people, that there might have been 20,000. Houses built by these ancient men of the Panhandle were usually one story in height, sometimes made of stones placed vertically in slab-like arrangements, forming substantial walls. Rooms varied in size from six to twenty-five feet square. It was probable, Dr. Moorehead said, that the people who built the dwellings depended upon the buffalo and other game for their sustenance, although some wild plants resembling the sweet potato have been found near the ruins. The Eastern scientist stated that the American Museum recently voted to have work done by local trained men and to have valuable specimens stay in the museums of the section in which they were found. Dr. Moorehead declared he had never found any buried treasure and had never personally known anyone who had secured anything of monetary value by digging for treasure.

An article in the *Amarillo Globe News* on October 18, 1964 details Floyd Studer taking a group of clubwomen on a tour of the Rocky Dell pictographs and petroglyphs. Two years later he

succumbed to a heart attack. He was widely recognized as an authority on Panhandle history and archeology for over 60 years.

### FRANK "CHIEF" RUNKLES

The following excerpts are from an interview with Chief Runkles, done in his home at Post, Texas, by Curtis Tunnell in May 1994. The interview was conducted in Chief's trophy room among his very extensive collection of archeological and ethnographic materials. At the age of 85, Chief was still donning his American Indian regalia and telling stories for social and civic groups, tour groups, and school classes.

"I was born in Mitchell County, Kansas, in 1909, December the 28th, and they named me Albert Franklin Runkles. My mother told me [jokingly] that I was named after Prince Albert. My father was one of those vagabonds. He didn't stay in one place very long. He liked to move around. He was very good at taking care of cattle, so he was in demand by dairymen. My mother told me that we moved 76 times from the time I was born until the time I was married.

My father took me to the Pine Ridge Reservation when I was six years old. I got to be one of the boys, and I learned a great deal of skills like shooting a bow and arrow. First thing I ever shot was a mallard duck, and he flew right by me with my arrow in him. I have made many trips to Pine Ridge since then."

#### Beginning in Archeology

"I met my wife and we married in 1929 down at Dublin, Texas. I don't recall ever finding an arrowhead until I was living there at Dublin, and I was probably about 15 or 16 years old. I began collecting in those sand fields in 1925, '26, '27, '28, and I had gotten interested in archeology from reading and visiting museums. I saw my first bone hairpipes in a museum in Denver, and a little tag on there said, 'These are Indian beads made from baby buffalo bones.' [Chuckle.]

During the Dust Bowl years, they didn't plant peanuts down there at Dublin for three years, and everybody was nearly starving to death. So I just wandered around in those peanut fields and the wind was blowing the sands

off. And I came up on some of those softer fields, and where it blew below the plow line you could find fire hearths everywhere that had not been disturbed, just laying there just like they left them. It was along the Leon River. It's at the edge of the Edwards Plateau, and there is flint in all the roadside ditches, and nodules on the hills. There is natural chert and various grades of it down there. Every campsite would be thickly littered with debris and chips of flint. So much so that even farmers complained about it dulling their plows.

I was contacted by Dr. Patterson when he did his corner-tang book [Patterson 1936]. And I had an opportunity to be exposed to a lot of good archeology. He was interested in my corner-tang, because he wanted to put in on the frontispiece of his book. But it so happened that the printers had already selected two knives to go there. But he says in the book that in his opinion mine is the only corner-tang in existence that has the original handle on it.

Dr. Meroney from Baylor came up to see my things, and he asked me to bring my corner-tang down to an annual meeting of the Central Texas Archeological Society. They were just getting organized and they were going to have a bulletin. So I wrote my first archeological article and it is in Volume I, January 1935 of the Central Texas Archeological Society [CTAS], in Waco. I began to make notes about all my hunting, and in my feeble way, I got enough of it on paper that they printed it in the second volume of the CTAS bulletin.

And my experience of simply collecting surface sites in those fields gave me a lot of information, because I recorded everything in an area. The wind was actually excavating those sites deeper and deeper each year. I'd make one round and have both pockets full."

#### Depths of the Depression

Even in the depths of the Great Depression when jobs were nonexistent and food was hard to find, archeological curiosity and the collecting instinct was still strong in Chief Runkles. He related the following poignant story:

"Those fields were just bare, with no human tracks in them. And everybody was wearing patches on their knees and their seats. I walked five miles to a little town over there where we

did our trading, when I was living on the farm in the spring of 1935, just to get a piece of bacon and a little piece of cheese that they were giving away in the government program. I planted corn, and then for every four rows of corn I planted two rows of black-eyed peas. My corn got up about three feet high and just folded up. My old black-eyed peas got up a foot high or less, and just a few leaves on them and just all wilted, but they just kept on making little, short black-eyed peas. And we ate those. I got my cotton sack out and gathered every one of them, and spread them out in the loft of the barn. And my wife's got more recipes on how to cook black-eyed peas than you ever saw. You can even make them for breakfast. And we wouldn't touch one with a ten-foot pole today! [Chuckle.]

There were some wild turkeys down on the creek, and just a few of them survived. And I saw them down there one day. Right on the bank of this little old creek was a big old oak tree. And one of the limbs came right over the bank of the creek about five feet above the ground. And I saw these droppings, and I said, 'Well, birds have been roosting up there in that tree.' That's Turkey droppings! Turkey Droppings! Just about dark I told my wife, 'I think I found a turkey roost. It's about half a mile down that creek. I'm going down there and see if there's any turkeys on that roost.' It was a moonlit night. So I went down that creek and I walked up there and I could hear them talking to each other. They could hear me coming and they were talking to each other. And I got up under that limb and reached up and felt along and I could feel their feet. I got to where there was two feet right together, and I run my hand right up under that turkey and come down on these two legs and it said URRRRRR. I reached up and put a hand under the breast and come right down with it in my arm and I took off for the house.

I got away from there a ways and I put the head on the ground and pulled it off with my foot and carried it away until it bled out good. And I got back to the house and we picked that turkey. And I said 'maybe we better burn these feathers,' because I was scared to death that I might have done something wrong, but I wasn't going to let that meat get away. We burned the feathers, and put all the skin and entrails in a bucket and threw them out for the coons or whatever might eat them. And, boy, we had turkey! After all those black-eyed peas, that

turkey went pretty good. She fried up the little pieces and put it down in a stone jar and poured grease on it, and she would gouge a piece or two out and make soup with it. Soup would go a long ways.

One day my neighbor was going down to town in a wagon, and he said, 'come, go with me.' His poor old mules took us five miles into town, and I went down to this place and signed up to get this food. And the man said, 'I'll have to come out to your place and see if you got food stored before I can let you have any.' Well, one day he drove up in front of the house, and he came into the house in a huff. He said I rolled over one of your chickens down there. I said 'where...where,' and he said just down the road. I ran down the road and there lay that big old red hen. I picked her up and brought her back to the house. He said, I don't know if you can get any good out of that. I said don't worry, we sure can."

### My Collection

"I had found one of those grain-doors along the railroad, and I brought it home and put it on the wall. I had put some of my best arrowheads all along on that, and I had some frames full of arrowheads on the wall. It was a kind of thing that satisfied my ego, and I could see what I had found and enjoy it. Well, the man looked around and he said, 'Gee Whiz!, You've got a lot of things here.' My dad had collected lots of things in his younger years from the Indians at Pine Ridge, mostly bead necklaces and such. And I had a row of those necklaces all along one wall up high. And the man said, 'I can't give you any food, you've got millions of dollars worth of stuff here. You need to start selling this stuff.' I said, all right, pick out what you want and I'll let you have it, good bargains for cash today. 'Oh, I can't buy any of it, I'm just barely getting by myself,' he said. I said, man, I can't eat this stuff. I don't know who would want to buy it! I would have taken ten cents a round for arrowheads if I could have got it. So the man said, 'Well, I can see what you mean, you come in and we're going to give out food next Thursday.' Mama had that chicken all fixed, and had it in the [evaporative] cooler when he left.

In March 1938 I came to West Texas and went to the [Texas] Tech campus to take an

exam in the agricultural department. We stayed in a motel that cost fifty cents a night. I decided to talk to Dr. Holden to see if I could get a job working in the museum. He had a little office there in the museum and was teaching history. So I visited with him and he was a fine gentleman, and I had a little folder showing some of my collections. And he said, 'How many arrowheads did you say you found in Comanche, Erath, and Hamilton counties?' I said, well about 18,000 in all. So, Dr. Holden sent me to see Mr. Bill McMillan who was a big supporter of that museum. And Mr. McMillan said, "Curry, I'm going to give this boy a job. Now, that archeological truck you've got sitting up there that I bought, it's just sitting there.' It was a ton and a half stake-bodied truck, with a big sign on the side that said Texas Technological College Archeological Group. He said, 'I want you to let this boy use that to go down there and get his household goods and his collection, and bring them out here, and let's put that collection in the museum while he's going to school.' And so we just loaded the old truck up and put some of my kids and me in the back, and Mama took off in it, and we came to West Texas. And we drove up to the museum and unloaded boxes of my collection, and they never did unpack half of them. I finally got my collection back in 1962.

By 1939 the war in Europe was broiling, and things were beginning to change. I was advised that I better try to get me a job in some kind of essential industry, because we were going to get into war. I was sent to Joe McIlhane,<sup>3</sup> the biggest milk processor in Lubbock. I went to work and I never did get to go to school. So, I trained women to run those little horse and wagons and put out milk. They did real good, but quite frequently they would call me about 6:30 in the morning and say, 'I can't be there today, I have to be out.' So I'd go run this route. And when I got 16 of them working, sometime two of them would call at once, so I had to run two routes. I would run one and come back and another old horse and wagon would be waiting and I'd load it up and take off.

I helped Dr. Fred Wendorf and Earl Green organize the South Plains Archeological Society [SPAS], I believe in 1957. We gradually began to turn arrowhead picker-uppers into archeologists. We encouraged them to keep a record of everything on a site, and keep it together and put numbers on it."

### The Garza Site

"And then one day those highway engineers decided that they were going to build a public road between Post, the county seat of Garza, and Gale, the county seat of Borden, where there was no road. So I asked the engineers to be on the lookout for any sites that might be within their right-of-way. Seems like it was about 1957 or 1958. I was the president of the SPAS at that time. And so they called me one day and said 'We were surveying out there today, and down in the bed of this dry creek we saw a line about three feet underground that had some bones in it. We scratched in that and its got charcoal and chips of flint in there with the bones, and the bones are all broken-up.' So I said we had better go and see about that!

Well, it was a bank about four to five feet high from the edge to the bed of the creek. And this layer was down about three feet in that bank. And a big mesquite tree was growing right over the only fire hearth that was exposed. It turned out that this was not a kill site, but it was a bison processing site and a campsite [Runkles 1964]. I called Dr. Wendorf, Dr. Green, and Dr. Kelley [who was Dr. Holden's son-in-law], and asked them if they could come and check this buried site. We thought it might need to be excavated. Could we get a college group to come? So they got down here pretty early, and it turned cold that day. We went out there all in my pickup. Dr. Green sat down there and took a little sharp stick and began to dig into the layer and he hit charcoal. He pulled a plastic bag out of his pocket and began raking the charcoal into the bag. He said, "I'm going to take this sample now while we have a chance. Something could happen, we could have a heavy rain and this would be washed away.' We already had Dr. Heizer's little book that he wrote, a little wire-bound thing [Heizer 1949]. And we laid it off in ten-foot squares. After we got it staked-off, we drew numbers to see who would take charge of what square. We would get help from the high school, and anybody else that was interested. It fell to my lot to dig the square under the mesquite tree, and I was glad because of the fire hearth. Eventually we found four other fire hearths. But it was hard clay, and we could not trowel it, but had to work it with an ice pick.

In the big hearth that I dug, we didn't find any diagnostic artifacts. There were bones in the hearth, and there were three layers of rock.

The bottom layer of rocks was lying on charcoal, and the second layer was on charcoal, and the top layer was also lying on other charcoal. Apparently they built the fire three different times or on three different days. An old Indian told me, 'Well, they just spread a green hide over a little pit and put water and meat in there, and some wild onions and maybe a few terrapins. And then they would rake some hot rocks in it, cook, and eat. Whenever they would break camp, they would throw their hide in there, throw some of the fire rocks in, and go.'"

### • GEORGE C. MARTIN •

Martin was another of the early amateur archeologists who made a significant contribution to Texas archeology during the Depression years. I know him primarily through correspondence between him and Mrs. Quillin of the Witte Museum, between the years of 1929 and 1934. Martin published some of the first reports on the central Texas Coast in early Bulletins of the Texas Archeological Society (Martin 1929, 1930). He also authored some early Witte Museum Bulletins on his work in West Texas (Martin 1933, n.d.). The following are excerpts from the Martin-Quillin correspondence:

Martin to Quillin, dated July 28, 1929:

While commercially my finds here have little value, they are priceless as a representative lot from a section of the country hitherto unexplored archeologically, a country not represented in any other museum in the country. The collection I am sending you consists not only of the choicest specimens found personally, but contains the best pieces found in the past (twenty to thirty years ago) by collector friends who have cheerfully permitted me to make selections from their finds. Every piece is authentically from the Texas coast, all from sections occupied by Indians of Coahuiltecan and Karankawan origin, and not one questionable piece will be sent you. One or two pieces are unquestionably intrusive, but were positively found in this section. The National Museum made a strong plea for potsherds and skeletal material, so I let them have what I had

in this line as I will be able to duplicate it for you later. The fishhooks of flint I considered questionable when I first examined them, and I have heard since on very good authority that they are now being made for sale to unsuspecting collectors in two sections of Texas.

Martin to Quillin, dated July 19, 1929:

I have another small box almost ready to send now, Bison bones from a campsite on the Lamar Peninsula, a bone implement from the Oso in Nueces County, a pierced tusk from the Lamar Peninsula near Copano Creek, a Panama shell bead, etc. I don't care anything about publicity. An article of a general character describing the sites here will appear in the *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* in August [Martin 1929]. Tomorrow, if no rain, I will visit a newly discovered hill site on the Nueces River sixty miles inland. The culture on these sites is quite different from that of the coast.

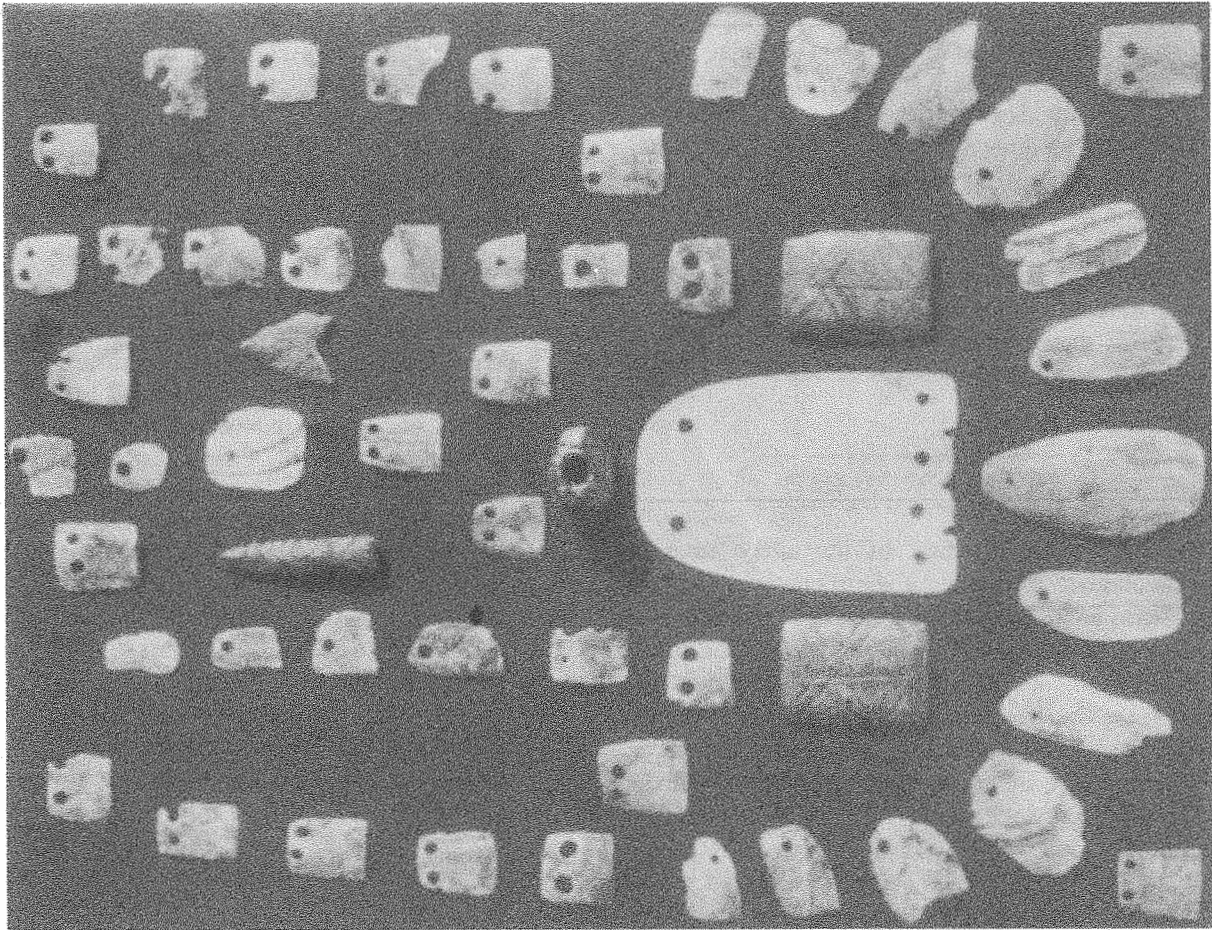
Martin to Quillin, dated July 22, 1929:

Herewith another package, this one containing several very scarce items, the two bone skewers or forks, and the drilled tooth and the bead. I am on the track of more very scarce items which I hope to obtain for you later. Also contemplate the total reduction of a very interesting mound in Nueces County during August, one near which were found skeletons seated upright with heads erect, artifacts of very crude workmanship and bone knives of great beauty. The skulls have absolutely no forehead, do not rise above the eyebrows.

Martin to Quillin, dated August 6, 1929:

I am sending you this day, by express, the greater part of the balance of my coastal collection. The rest will follow in a few days. Some of the material I have sent and am sending to you will never be duplicated from this section of the country. The carved stones with incised line decoration are absolutely unique. I refused \$110.00 for the three offered by a





Shell ornaments from burial on Calle de Oso, from *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society*, Volume 2, 1930.

rather ardent collector. The three clay and asphalt fetishes are very unusual. The boatstone will probably never be duplicated here. Some of the bird-points, particularly the serrated specimens, are very scarce. You may look for the rest of this lot, about 100 specimens, in a few days.

Martin to Quillin, dated August 10, 1929:

A little later, when I have time to arrange them, I will send you a small Lipan Apache collection, and a small collection from the Mathis dam on the Nueces. Don't forget that if you desire a case for the coastal collection to keep it separate from other material you can call on me as I formerly suggested.

Martin to Quillin, dated October 22, 1929:

Dr. J. Alden Mason, of Penn. Univ. has spent several days with me here and has departed for Brownsville, thence to Arizona, and after that to Guatemala and Yucatan for a winter digging in the Maya ruins. He pronounced the specimens from this section in the Witte Museum as the finest he had seen originating in Texas. He secured about one hundred specimens here, gifts and finds while he was with me on the sites, and was highly pleased. Also, I have another skull, but maybe you don't want more of such.

Martin to Quillin, dated May 26, 1930:

Have just received, as a gift from Mr. E. B. Sayles, of Abilene Texas, a very nice collection of artifacts from that section of Texas. Of course, I will give these to the Witte Museum. Most of the specimens



are large arrowheads, knives, scrapers, etc., and a metate is to follow soon. Do you desire me to mount these for you?

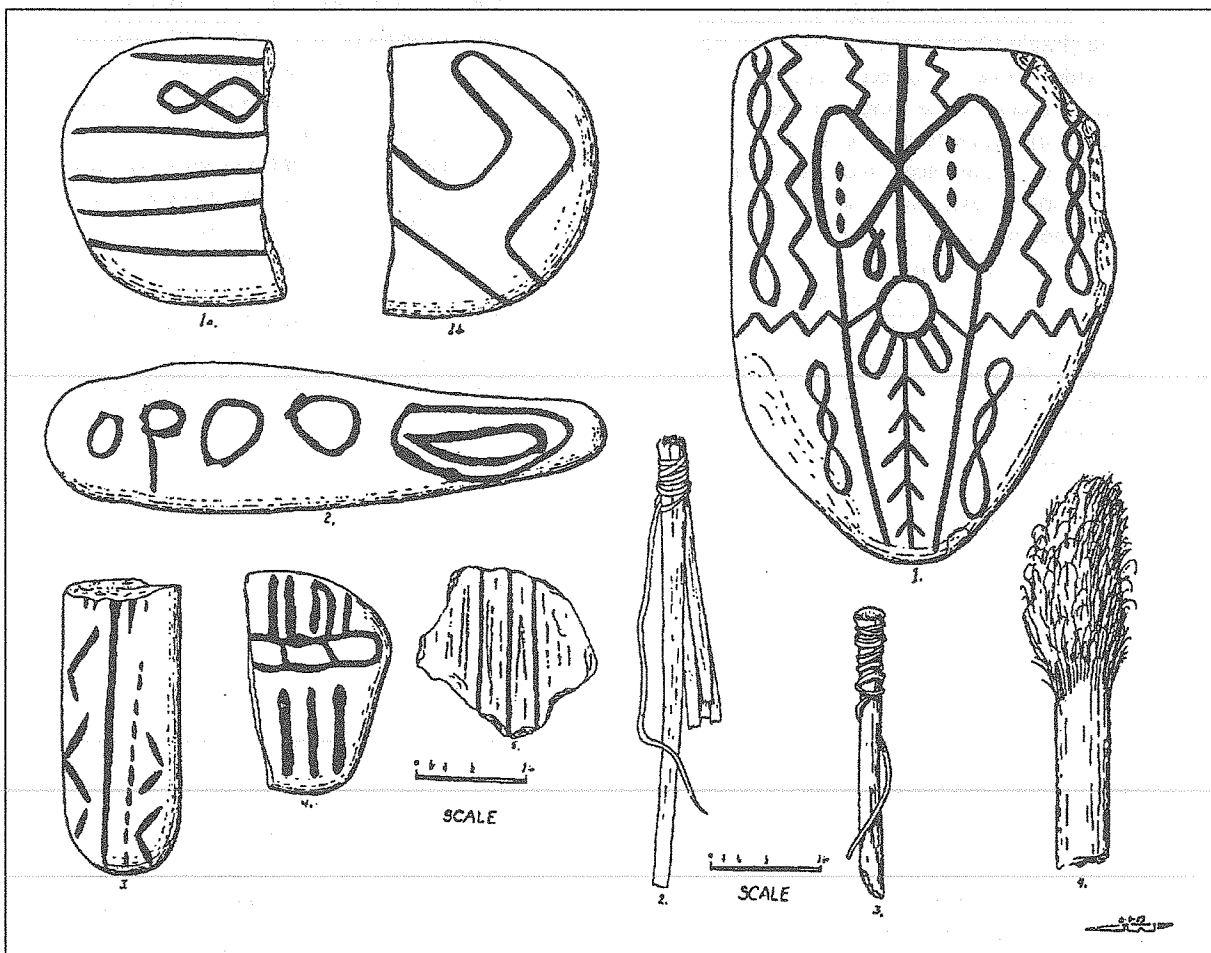
Martin to Quillin, dated December 28, 1931:

I am preparing an article for the Archeological Society on the "painted pebbles" from the cave at Shumla [Martin and Woolford 1932]. Three of these were already in the museum before Mr. Woolford and I went out to the Trans-Pecos country and I am not certain whether they were brought in to the museum by Miss. Gutzheit or another of your staff. They are apparently unique in this country. I do not think the artist [Davenport] copied all of them and I have written him. There was one I remember that had arrowheads and hoof-prints clearly drawn on it, and another quartered with two of the quarters shaded.

These were the two most interesting of the pebbles. I have for you as soon as I can mount and label it, a portion of a fire-carrier. These were made of stone and looked like very large pipes. They usually had a large bowl at one end in which tinder was packed and either a hole or a stem at the other end. The tinder was lighted and occasionally, as carried along, air was drawn through the smaller hole or stem to keep the tinder smoldering.

Quillin to Martin, dated August 10, 1931:

Just another "many many thanks" for the potsherds which you were so kind in sending to us. I believe your generosity is making other archaeologists feel that they too want to help in making the Witte Museum one of the outstanding places for research and information on Texas Archaeology. Incidentally the



Painted pebbles and paint brushes, from Shumla Cave, 1933. Bulletin 3, Witte Memorial Museum.

knife you gave us last is the largest one we have. I put it in a better exhibition case this morning.

Martin to Quillin, dated December 6, 1932:

I have purchased, as a gift to the museum, the two most beautiful flint knives that have ever been found in this section. One is nine inches in length, the other over seven. Exquisite specimens and from a Karankawan site on San Antonio Bay. With these are about seventy fine spearheads and arrowheads. I gave an awful price for them considering the present times, but they would have been unpurchasable in good times, so I took them while I could get them.

Martin to Quillin, dated February 6, 1933:

It is my belief that a thorough working of the Shumla Caves (there are more than one, and some untouched), the Langtry cave [Eagle Cave], (about 150 feet long or wide, 50 or more feet deep, with 15 feet of accumulated ashes on the flooring, many artifacts on the surface, and absolutely untouched) and the completion of the excavation of the Bee Canyon cave shelter would yield enough specimens to create great interest and permit the raising of sufficient funds for an extended expedition into the Deadhorse range where even the natives have not been. A rocker or cradle sieve should be carried (there are approximately 3,750 cubic yards of ashes in the Langtry cave alone, all of which should be sifted). Six laborers under direction of at least three persons with interest in the work could be used at this cave.

Quillin to Thos. J. "Uncle Tom" Miller, dated May 30, 1934:

When I left you, I promised you that I would not send Mr. Martin and the boys down until you sent for us. When I got back I found that there were sacks of flour all over the office and food and whatnot ready for the trip. Mr. Martin has already given up his business for the month of June so as to be able to go. Mr. George Nalle, and his son, George Jr.,

the latter being Mrs. Ferguson's grandson, also were waiting in Austin awaiting my return. They have invented a sifter that runs by an engine so that the work of sifting the caves will be easier and quicker. Also, George Jr. is bringing with him his little \$150.00 camera and planning on 200 films for pictures, and Mr. Nalle Sr. is bringing a moving picture machine, and somewhere (I do not know yet where) I am going to have to find money enough to buy 400 feet of film.

He will have with him one of the boys who worked on last Summer's expedition, Harding Black. They are taking their own food with them for taking care of themselves. Jack [Davenport] will leave here either Monday or Tuesday. He will have with him two boys and the water barrel, the water bags and food. Jack is to drive straight through from here to your house so as to cut down all possible gas bills and expense. When Mr. Martin and Mr. Nalle meet Jack, they want to go on to the caves that you said hold the corn-cobs. If you are well enough to, and want to go, I will be very glad to have you join the men at that point and more or less serve as the cook for the dinners. I can afford \$1.00 per day and food.

I imagine from what Mr. Martin says, that he can get all the work that he wants done in a week or two. Jack says that he can take our big barrel for dishwater and cookwater. We have six 5-gallon water bags, and I believe that will be enough for drinking water. I am not sending any elaborate food this time, but will have several extra sacks of flour which I am going to inform Jack to leave with you either to trade some of it for the Mexican labor and some for you to use in trade or as you wish. We will have beans and somebody gave us bacon and there will be a bushel of potatoes. I'm going to begin work on getting a couple of hams so that the boys may have a taste of that good ham, potatoes and onions that you know how to cook better than anybody.

Quillin to Uncle Tom Miller, dated July 5, 1934:

I do not understand Mr. Martin, but he had his way in getting down on your

grounds against your advice and certainly against mine. I had no idea, however, that he would make an airplane trip [fast trip] of same and worry you beyond anything that was necessary. I am really awfully sorry about this, Uncle Tom, and I hope that you won't feel hard toward the Museum. He was determined to go and refused to go at all unless he could go to the Mariscal Canyon, and he agreed that if I would arrange for him to go that far, he would, in turn, excavate two weeks on the Devil's River.

Well, I guess you know the story that he got out of your country as fast as he could. When he got to Langtry, he spent a couple of hours at Eagle's Nest [Eagle Cave], then went to the Devil's River and, I think, spent two hours there, turned around abruptly and said there were no caves and hit for home. Of course, this is a great disappointment to me because it is hard to raise money for food from outsiders in the first place and second, the City expects the expedition to be a success. [Apparently the failure of this expedition ended Mr. Martin's association with the Witte, and Jack Davenport led the next expedition to West Texas in 1936.]

### HARDING BLACK

Justly famous as a ceramic artist, potter extraordinaire, and glaze wizard, Harding worked for the Witte Museum on several early archeological expeditions. I met Harding in the late 1960s through mutual friends, Mardith Schuetz and Georganna Greer, and had the privilege of visiting with him on several occasions over the next decade. The following excerpt is taken from a recorded interview done by Bobbie McGregor in about 1988, and transcribed by the Texas Historical Commission in 1998.

#### Witte Museum

"San Antonio finally decided that Ellen Quillin would be the person to build the museum because she was a science teacher at the Old Main Avenue High School, and so they elected her to build the museum. She started

raising money and she even had children from her classes selling bluebonnet seeds down on the streets downtown. She and her husband always got out in the brush. He collected bird eggs and she collected flowers to press. She had to write the books on flowers and cactus for this area. There were no books on Texas flora at that time. The teacher had to write her own books. [Chuckle.]

So she started, and she decided on this Brackenridge Park site. At that time it was a swampy piece of ground. Whenever it rained the water stood like a swamp. So she started and built the main building to begin with. I still remember seeing her sitting there at the phone raising money. Her whole life was dedicated to raising money to build a bigger museum. When she got married she told her husband, there's not to be any children...her child was the museum! That came first in everything, and it did during her whole life.

Sam Woolford decided to start an archeological society at the Witte Museum. He was the editor of the *San Antonio Light* at that time, and he was interested in archeology. The University of Texas was doing some digging out in Big Bend and he was interested, so he organized this society. That's how I got started at the museum. Woolford was a good friend of George Martin, who was sort of an amateur archeologist. So they decided to have an expedition out to West Texas. I was selected to go along to be one of the [Chuckle.] pick-and-shovel men."

#### Shumla Caves

"I'll never forget that first trip [April 1933]. For some reason or another we started out at midnight. [Chuckle.] We ended up in Shumla, Texas, it was just a railroad siding with a couple of railroad workhouses and a filling station. We arrived there in the middle of the day and it was hot as blazes!

So we set up camp and there was a little cave just down from our campsite where we set up the kitchen. It was a bare cave with no ash or anything. We set up our stove and our kitchen and dining room there. We had a spring right down below. We stretched a rope from the top and tied it to a bush and we let ourselves down that steep slope to go down to the spring. We had to carry our water up from the spring because the Rio Grande is always muddy, you

can't drink it. That's the reason the Indians lived there, because of this nice spring water. All these caves [at Shumla] were heavily populated because of that spring.

Next morning we had our breakfast and George Martin and some of the boys went one way and myself and Albert Maverick III went down the other way. We ended up at what we called "Bee Cave." It had a beehive up in a crevice in the rock. We started digging at one end, and I hadn't dug five minutes until I come up with a handful of toe bones from a skeleton. So we started yelling and screaming, and the rest of them thought we had got rattlesnake bit or something. [Chuckle.] They came rushing over. So we proceeded the rest of the day to excavate out this Indian's skeleton. The only thing with it was a slate pendant, like a dagger. But the skeleton was in good shape. So that's the way we started the first Witte Museum Expedition day.

George Martin was the supervisor. [Chuckle.] He didn't do any digging. Oh, if we found something he'd go over and pick around. But he wasn't much of a pick-and-shovel man. [Chuckle.] We had about six people on that first dig. I don't remember their names. [George Martin and his son, Fletcher Gardner, John Eross, Jack Davenport, Jack Specht, Everett Lehman, John Davis, George Nalle Jr.] Albert Maverick had to carry the heavy metates out of the canyon. We found a lot of metates. One of the peculiar things, these metates were usually found with a burial. They'd be right over the head of the burial. Sometimes you'd run into a metate, and uh-oh, there must be a burial here.

Burials were always made in a small bundle. They were flexed and made as small as possible, so they wouldn't have to dig a very big hole, I guess. They bound them up with that matting in a real tight bundle. Sometimes they spread cactus leaves all over it, I guess to keep varmints from digging in. You find this layer of cactus leaves above the burial along with the metate over the head.

George Martin was ribbing Albert Maverick because his mother had made up a box of food, and she put in a can of Italian Marmalade. George Martin started ribbing, 'Of all things to bring out on an expedition! Italian Marmalade!' [Chuckle.] So during the middle of the night, Albert threw it down the canyon. [Chuckle.] The next morning as I went down the canyon, I

found it. I brought it back and so I had some nice Italian Marmalade to eat. [Chuckle.]

Then we had George Nalle, the governor's [Mariam Ferguson] grandson. Of course us guys were mostly poor people, and they were rich. So when we heard he was coming, there was consternation at the camp, the governor's grandson is going to be here!. So they arrived, and the first day of digging somebody threw a whole shovel full of ash right on top of his head. It's a good thing he came up smiling. [Chuckle.] But he was a good joe and his father was real good. His father took a lot of photographs. It proved to be a very good place to dig because of that fresh water spring. We found an awful lot of good stuff there!

We screened all the ash to make sure we found stuff. Of course, now I realize that we should have saved seeds and a lot of stuff that we just didn't keep, because they're just as important as some of the stone stuff. We weren't too professional at that time. Saving all the indications of food and such should have been taken care of, but it was not. We probably didn't do too good a professional job, but I guess we got the stuff before the pot poachers got it, which was a good thing.

Well, after coming back from this first expedition, Ellen Quillin knew that I'd been doing some Indian coiled pots at home, because I was interested in Indian pottery. During my scouting days whenever we were on the river, I would look for campsites and pick up arrowheads and broken pieces of pottery and things like that. So I was interested in how Indian pottery was made. Quillin knew I'd been working with coiled Indian pots so she said, 'Why don't we, you, start a children's pottery class, because you know hand molding.' So in the old streetcar that was here, we started the pottery classes. We started children's classes at 10¢ a class. That was in the Depression, so if I made two or three dollars in a week, I thought I was doing pretty good. As a matter of fact, in a year's time I saved 75 dollars!"

### Eagle Cave Expedition

"At Eagle Cave [1936] there was Jack Davenport and myself, and Ed Ritchey. Joe Benz served as cook for awhile. Jack Davenport was an artist and he was doing these Coats-of-Arms. George Martin had a racket going where he sold these. For 25 dollars, he'd do your Coat-of-

Arms. So Jack was doing the artwork on these Coats-of-Arms for George Martin. That was his racket!



Eagle Cave, ca. 1930.

During the Depression when the City told Quillin, 'Just close it down, the museum isn't a necessary thing.' They didn't have funds to pay anybody at the Witte Museum. So Quillin, being a German, that just ruffled her. She said, 'The Witte Museum is going to stay open!' So she proceeded to open up a reptile garden, which people would pay a dime to see snakes, [chuckle] but they wouldn't pay a dime to support a museum. Jack Davenport opened up the Reptile Garden. That's what brought Jack Davenport into the picture at the Witte Museum. Martin was living in Rockport and was doing some archeological work along the coast. As a matter of fact he took me to a lot of sites and I picked up pottery sherds. Now, you go back and there's either a filling station or a house on all those sites!

Jack Davenport built the shaker [screen] for Eagle Cave. We used shovels. We didn't do much trowel work. We had to move a lot of ash, I mean to find anything. We had a chute that shot the ash down into the canyon to get rid of it, get it out of our way. We arrived there, and we started out a little too early in the season. We started out in April and boy it got so cold at night it froze the water in our water barrel. [Chuckle.]

Every day after school three little boys from the neighbors there would come down to where we were digging. They had a little place over where they were digging. They were looking

for painted stones because you could get about 10 dollars [A fortune in the Depression] for one of those painted stones, and sell it. Jack Davenport decided to play a joke on them one day, so he went down to the river and got one of these nice flat river stones that the Indians painted on, and he painted a beautiful design on one side and then on the back side he painted, 'Made in Japan.' [Chuckle.] So he buried that over there [chuckle] where they'd dig the next day. All of a sudden we heard a hurrah over there and yelling. They came running over and about the time they got half-way one of them turned it over and saw the "Made in Japan," [chuckle] and you should have seen those poor boys. Their faces just dropped down like a curtain. [Chuckle.] Painted pebbles were found in the top of the deposits mostly [they found 45 in Eagle Cave]. Something I noticed was that the spider web design was at the lowest level.

Of course, the bottom part [of the deposits] was so badly burnt there was no fiber. Most of the fiber stuff was on the top levels where it hadn't been burnt. They used grass for bedding. We'd find these mattings of bedding material, because that ash wasn't very good to lay on to sleep, so they'd pull this grass and make bedding. The only building thing we found, it must have been a wind-break; at one end they put up some poles and wove some brush in it and made sort of a wind-break.

I found a fireless cooker. They didn't have pots to cook in, or even to carry water. They had baskets which they waterproofed to carry water, because there was no clay out there, they didn't make any pots. I was digging one day and I came to some rocks and then we took the rocks off and I found some grass. I removed the grass and in that was a bundle of yucca hearts that had been pulled out, the hearts in a bundle. Then below that I found some more grass and below that I found some more rocks. So they had heated up the bottom rocks and put the wet grass on top of the hot rocks, put the hearts in, put some more wet grass, and then some more hot rocks, and then covered the whole thing up. That's the way they cooked these yucca hearts to eat, or to make their brew. They took and chewed yucca hearts and spit it into holes they dug [in the limestone] at the side of the cave, by pounding. Some of

these holes would hold up to five gallons. They put spring water in these holes and then chewed this yucca and spit it into there. Of course with the saliva that would act as a fermentation, and that was their beer brewery.

Fiber artifacts were not very plentiful at Eagle Cave. Most all of that came from Shumla. We got very little fiber stuff from Eagle Cave. There were a few right on top, a few layers, and some few sandals and cordage, but it was pretty well burnt. Most of the good fiber stuff came from Shumla Caves.

We worked seven days a week. Jack was up at the crack of dawn. He could take two or three cans and put together a stew. [Chuckle.] Of course we never had any fresh meat, but he'd put in a can of chili with meat in it, to give it a little meat, and add corn and beans. We didn't have any fresh vegetables. Quillin acquired our food, a lot of it. She'd go to these different companies and ask for food and they'd give her a whole case of corn or a whole case of chili.

On one trip [Shumla in 1933], the Candy Factory gave her a big case of candy barber-poles. Martin brought his son along, and that's all he wanted to eat was the barber-pole candy. We finally got rid of him. We had a barrel of water in the truck and a barrel of gasoline. He took the pump out of the gasoline and put it in our barrel of water. So we didn't have any water...so we hit the highway and put him on a bus and sent him home. [Chuckle.] He wasn't exactly an expedition member!

At Eagle Cave, there were some of these things that were unfired clay, looked like cigars. [They found 12 of these figurines.] That's the nearest thing to pottery we found. But they were not fired."

### JACK DAVENPORT

Jack was a man of many talents. As an artist, he did family crests and coats-of-arms, in collaboration with George C. Martin. He helped build the original reptile garden at Witte Museum, including the cut-metal decorations in front. He helped install exhibits at the museum and served as general handyman for whatever needed to be fixed. Jack worked on the Witte Museum crew that excavated the Shumla caves in 1933, and also was one of the principal excavators at Eagle Cave in 1936. The Shumla excavations produced some of the finest

perishable artifacts ever recovered in the Val Verde County region, and Davenport made fine drawings of these materials for the publications (Martin 1933). In 1938, he published an interesting report on the Eagle Cave work (Davenport 1938), and co-authored with Carl Chelf a report on painted pebbles from the lower Pecos and Big Bend regions, in 1941 (Davenport and Chelf 1941). For years, he was chief building inspector for the City of San Antonio.

This excerpt is taken from an interview with Jack Davenport done by Curt Harrell in 1988, and transcribed by the Texas Historical Commission in 1998.

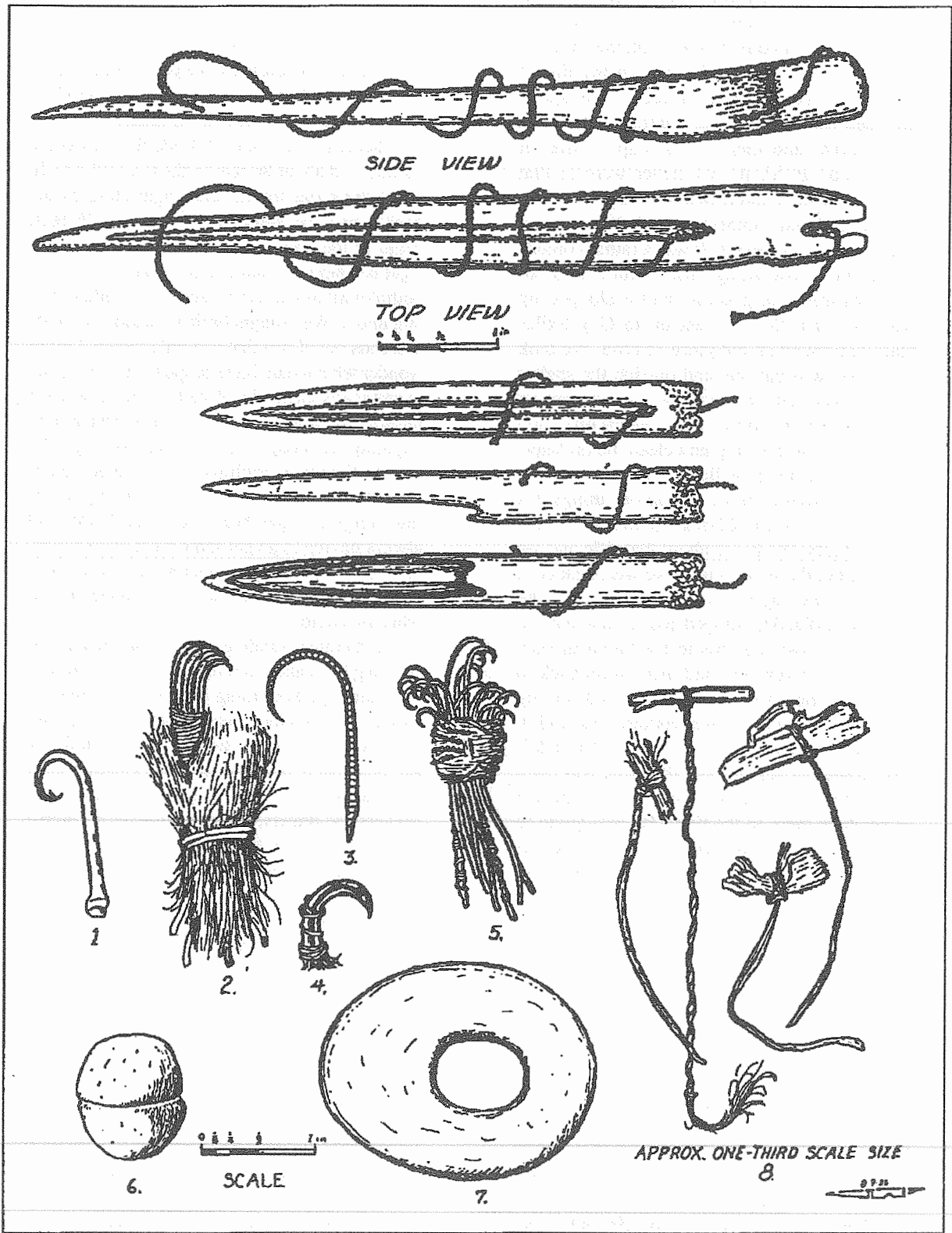
### Eagle Cave

"Eagle Cave was one of the largest ones that we worked. We put a trench that went from the front to the back. There was about seventy-five feet of it. It was about fifteen feet deep at the deepest part in the middle. We found that there were definite layers, beyond just the fiber separation at the top. We were working about ten foot sections. We would screen all that after we had gone through it by hand. It was surprising how much we missed going through it by hand. Then we'd take the next layer and work that back. Sometimes we'd get a little impatient and we would take a top layer of the next section back before we took this one to the bottom. That was 52 years ago, and I'm a little over 80 now.

Most of that deposit was wood ash and stone dust, and it flowed like water...that's how fine it was. It would get into the pores of your skin and later you put on a white shirt and wear it five minutes and take it off and your collar...talk about ring around the collar [Chuckle.], you had it!

I can tell you a tale about that pool that is right below Eagle Cave. Every day, working the shovel, we could look down in the floor of the canyon and there was the nicest pool of water down there. Oh, it looked inviting. So Harding Black and I said: 'Well the heck with all this noise, we're just too dirty, we're going to go take a bath.' So we worked our way down into the canyon and over to this pool of water and shucked our clothes. He took a run and hit that water...well I'll swear to this day he walked on top of it. [Chuckle.] He came out of that thing in nothing flat! He said: 'Oh,





Drawings by Jack Davenport of hooks, lures, sinkers, and knitting needles of bone from Shumla Cave, 1933. Bulletin 3, Witte Memorial Museum.

that's cold!' I thought he was kidding, down here in this canyon, the sun beating down, it was hot as the dickens down there. And I hit the water, and I come out too! Oh that was the coldest water I've ever been in in my life. It was spring-fed. So we'd get wet and we'd soap and then we'd run hit that water and get out in the sunlight and then try to soap a little bit more, and run hit it....we never were in that water more than about two seconds!

We had that motor-driven shaker [screen] and it was a neat device. It was a rather complicated, but well-working shaker. Our only problem was the little gasoline motor clogged up with the dust. So we went up to Guy Skiles place and found an old piece of hose. We took that down and put one end outside the shelter and the other end we brought over and put on the intake for this little motor. Every once in a while we'd have to stop and clean the oil filter.

We had a boy [Joe Benz] who was sent out to do the cooking for us. He had two things that he prized, one was a .22 rifle and the other was a pair of boots. We heard about that rifle and we heard about those boots until we were sick of it. Anyhow, one day we were walking along the side of a cliff and he slipped and fell into the Rio Grande. He swam across to the Mexican side, which wasn't very far, and then swam back to the place where we were standing and waiting for him. When he got back, Harding asked him: 'Where's the heels on your boots?' He didn't have a heel on either boot. That glue was not a water-resistant glue and they had come off somewhere there in the river. He was going to keep us supplied with rabbits. There were lots of rabbits running around out there. So we were down in the cave working, and we heard him shoot. We said, 'Good...rabbit for dinner.' Then we heard him shoot again, and then again and again. He couldn't hit that wall sitting right here. [Chuckle.]

There was a kid from up in town that came down in camp about that time. He had a .22 rifle that you wouldn't believe. It had been wired together and pieced together; it looked like it had been run over by a couple of trains, awfulest looking thing you ever saw. We asked him if he could hit anything with it and he said, 'Yes, pretty good, pretty good.' We asked him if he could bring us in a rabbit or two. He said, 'Yup, I can do that, but I don't have any shells.' We said we'll get you some shells, how many do you need? He said, 'How many rabbits do you

want?' We said two, and he said, 'Two shells.' I think we gave him three. He came back with two rabbits and he still had that spare shell. [Chuckle.] How he did it I don't know. Anyhow, before we left there we gave him a couple of boxes of .22 shells. So he was the richest boy in town with two boxes of .22 shells.

That cave was about 190-odd feet across the mouth, and about 80 feet to the top of the arch, and I think our trench went right close to the back when we stopped it, so about 75 feet. Right at the end of that trench and just to the right is where we found that burial. There were potholes all through the place, where others had dug into it. We brought back a truckload of odds and ends out of just that one little trench. I often wonder what would have happened if we'd gone in and really cleaned that shelter out. I know we missed probably stuff that's much better than anything we brought back, or at least as good.

Practically everything was labeled [catalogued] there at the site. We were always loading things in cigar boxes to come back...and always having to go get some more cigar boxes. We didn't have any provision for storing anything really, so we just had to scrounge and do what we could.

I remember standing there in that trench and working back about a foot across the face of it. I went through everything as it rested on the existing shelf, and then raked it off, gathered it up and took it down to the shaker. I would say safely, about half of [the artifacts] it came out of the shaker. After we had gone through it with trowels and fingers, the shaker told us we didn't find as much as we thought we were. Digging in hard dirt is different. There, we were working in colored layers and strata by fiber. You could drop something on that surface and it just...pffft...was gone. If you carefully worked down to the next fiber layer you'd probably find it. The dust itself was just like water, it would flow like water, and stuff would just work down through it.

There was no way of keeping it out of your lungs. Why we didn't come back with a case of the black lung or something I don't know. When you breathe that stuff and you blow your nose, it comes out black. You spit and it would be black! Oh, it was awful! If I were the same age I'd probably be young and foolish enough to do it again. [Chuckle.]

Mostly at Eagle Cave there was Harding Black, myself and this other boy [Ed Ritchey].

Old Uncle Tom Miller came out there and was with us down there in the shelter. He was about 78 or 79 years old at the time. But he got along like a young fellow. He could climb those grades about as well as we could. But the dust got too much for him. We tried to run him out, but he wouldn't run. He stayed right in there with us. One morning he woke up and he was coughing, couldn't get his breath. So we bundled him up and run him back up to Guy Skiles to see if they had any ideas. We thought every cough was going to be his last one. Uncle Tom wanted to go home. Home to him was in the Alpine area down at Hot Springs. So I drove his pickup, he was sitting alongside of me and Harding Black drove the museum truck, and we took out. By the time we got to Alpine we were both pretty doggoned sleepy. But every once in a while he would gasp and just fold up and die, just go head-first down on the dashboard, and I'd get him by the collar and pull him back. Each one of those I thought was the last one, but we got to Sanderson, and he raised up and sniffed and said, 'Where are we?' I told him I thought we were at Sanderson. 'Oh, don't that air smell good!' he said. Well, from then on his condition improved rapidly.

So then Harding and I piled into the museum truck and headed back because all our stuff was scattered around camp. Coming to Langtry, we noticed an unusual amount of horses and pickups around Skiles cafe. We stopped and went in and two of the old ranchers sitting at the counter jumped up and offered us a seat, which is a little bit unusual. So we ordered some coffee. And not a word was said. Everything was quiet, until we got about two-thirds of a cup of coffee down us. Then the questions. They had heard that Uncle Tom had had some kind of seizure down there, a stroke or what have you, and that we had taken him back to Alpine and they all wanted to know. Everybody knew Uncle Tom! So they were all waiting for us to tell them what his condition was. So we told them how we left him and what his condition was at the time. After a few minutes there wasn't anybody in the cafe; they'd all scattered and gone back to their respective ranches. There's quite a grapevine out in that country.

There were those little cigar-shaped artifacts [they found 12]. We got to calling them cigars. So Black was working on the shaker one day and he let out a whoop and a holler, and of course we all had to go down and see what he'd

found. He had one of these, and we found out they were fired clay and not stone.

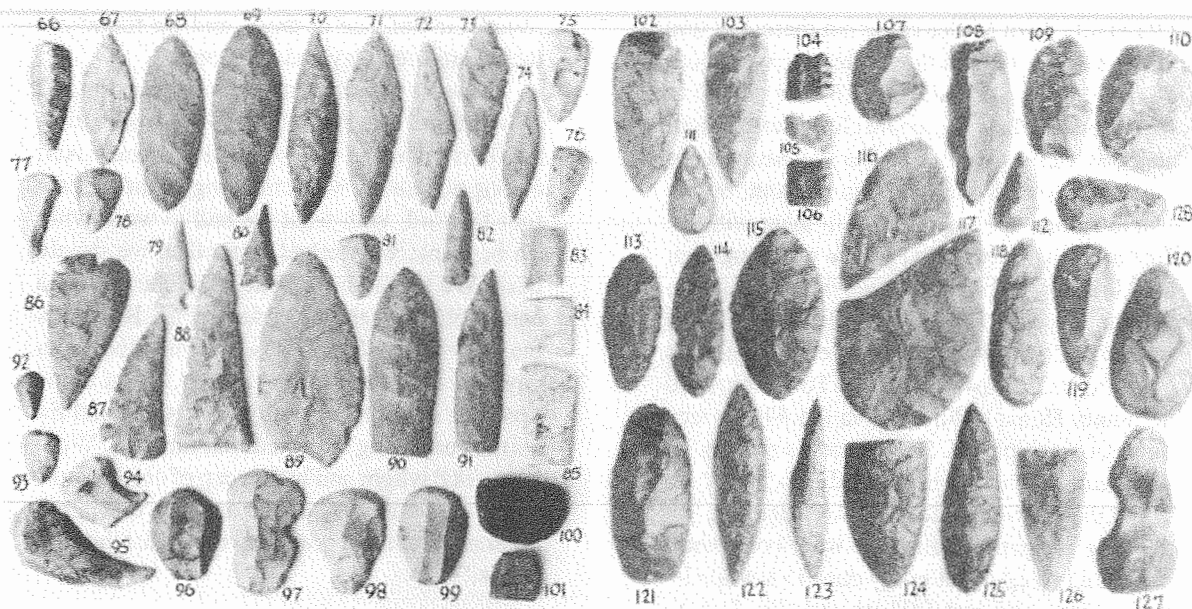
We were working under duress more or less all the time. The museum was yelling, 'Hurry up, hurry up and get something done.' And having no money, we were trying to put our best foot forward, with what we had to work with. To be frank, we worked faster than we should have. We should have gone slower and done a better job of tagging and identifying. But that's the way the ball bounces. We worked from daylight until dark in that shelter. We'd come dragging out of there at night and go up and fix a little something to eat and fall into bed. We'd get up at daylight and have a cup of coffee and a bite of something or another and then down into the shelter. I'm not bragging, that's just the way it was!"

#### • CYRUS N. RAY •

Dr. Ray is known to many as the Father of the Texas Archeological Society. Certainly he was one of the principal people involved in the founding of the Society in the fall of 1928. For many years he served diligently as an officer, director, and editor of publications for the Society. He was constantly wheedling articles from archeologists for publication in the *Bulletin*, and he served as gadfly at annual meetings, picking at any presentation that differed with his theories.

Dr. Ray never let his medical practice interfere with his archeological pursuits. He was constantly involved in excavating and collecting from archeological sites in the Abilene region, and publishing reports on his work in early volumes of the *Bulletin* (see, for example, Ray 1929, 1931, 1932, 1935, 1938). He carried on a voluminous correspondence with virtually everyone involved in Texas archeology. His handwritten letters are to be found in many archives.

The deep silt terraces along the branches of the Brazos River contained cultural strata buried up to as much as 30 feet in depth. Dr. Ray never accepted that there was little correlation between the depth of these deposits and absolute age of the cultural materials. He persisted in his contention that the deeply buried materials had to be very ancient. In spite of this erroneous conclusion, Dr. Ray contributed much to the knowledge of the archeology of the Abilene region, and eventually placed his extensive collection in the Museum at Texas Tech University.



Part of Cyrus Ray collection from Abilene region, from *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society*, Volume 7, 1935.

A few excerpts from Dr. Ray's correspondence give an impression of his strongly held and well-intentioned opinions:

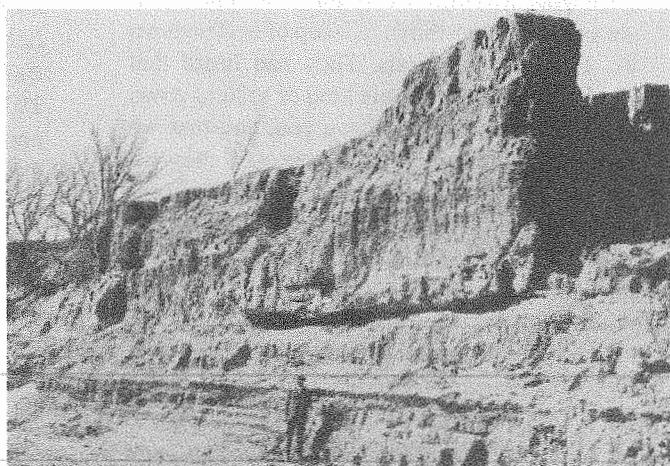
Letter from Cyrus Ray to A. T. Jackson dated February 11, 1936:

From newspaper reports it appears the University has decided not to make the [Texas Memorial] museum scientific in nature. I do hope that they do not make a junk collection of war debris, political leaders statues, and Civil War cartoons... like some collections which I have seen. The University is making a mess of a great opportunity if they make real the average moron's idea of a museum instead of creating something educational and valuable to those of the human race who are capable of appreciating the finer things of life. It is a shame that culture has no museum home in Texas.

Letter from A. T. Jackson to Cyrus Ray dated January 13, 1939:

Mr. George R. Fox is archeologist in charge of a WPA archeological crew sponsored by the Anthropology Department of the University of Texas.

At the time of the Abilene meeting, I recommended to Dr. Watts for membership in the Society Messrs. George R. Fox of South Bend, William A. Duffen of Victoria, and A. M. Woolsey of Austin. All of these men are working with us and I feel are thoroughly conscientious and interested only in the scientific side of archeology. Mr. George T. Wright of Paris, Texas, owns a large plantation on



Cyrus Ray pointing to charcoal stratum buried 24 feet in silt of Brazos River. Buried that deep, it had to be OLD, from *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society*, Volume 2, 1930.

Red River and is one of the influential citizens of that region. I have known him for several years and have always found him entirely dependable. He has been helpful to us in many ways. He has a large Indian mound on his place which we may sometime excavate. He has a nice collection both of pottery and flint artifacts, sometimes purchases from tenant farmers but never sells a specimen once it is acquired. He loaned his collection for exhibit here during the University Centennial Exposition. [Obviously, Dr. Ray was careful about who he let join the Society]

Letter from Cyrus Ray to Victor Smith dated February 19, 1940:

I received a letter from you about the basket found in the rockshelter near here. I spoke to Joe Ben Wheat who is digging for Texas Tech College on the Brazos and he said he would make a drawing of it for you some time. Hope that you have been doing some good work, and can favor us with another of your good articles this year! Got a rather bad natured letter from Kelley sometime ago. He seemed to resent keenly my sending back one of his manuscripts, but I sent back four others last year and one was sent in by Dr. Holden. I certainly had no cause for animus towards any of them. Kelley seems to think that I sent his back for such reasons. If he will write one which is up to our usual standards I still would publish it in spite of his brutish letter. His letter has not been answered as it did not deserve an answer.

Letter from Cyrus Ray to W. C. Holden dated December 14, 1943:

Sayles and Leighton made many mistakes in facts in their frantic efforts to push my work into the background, or rather out of my own discovery picture. Sayles spent the summer here digging solely in sites which I discovered and dug-in before I told him about them in 1930. Then without telling me he had geologists coming to view them...He had Leighton, Howard and Antevs come and

study them and then introduced me to them the night they left here, after they had been here a week or more. Never invited me to go out and help them experience my own discovery sites! Leighton's statements about Plate V fossils were given him second hand by Sayles...My opinion is that Leighton's geology is all wrong, and on that site it is definitely not Elm Creek silts, but is much older.

Letter from Cyrus Ray to Curry Holden dated November 4, 1945:

We had the largest attendance at our luncheon we ever have had with 44 out of 47 tickets sold or issued. Dr. Webb and wife came over from Shreveport Louisiana...Was very much surprised when Dr. Webb told me that he was invited over from Shreveport Louisiana to see a deposit of Bison Taylorii skeletons and Folsom points which your Professor Meade found near Plainview, and no one there even mentioned it to me. Today's paper has pictures of two Texas University non-cooperators [Evans and Chelf] who bushwhacked over my territory in 1940, and dug up mastodon and mammoth skeletons which I pointed out to them and never gave me any chance to see them in place. In fact after solemnly promising to notify me when excavation began, they got me to get owner's permission and then dug them out secretly and shipped the stuff all off to Austin without letting me see it. One of the worst offenders of all was this Glen fellow...That neither Sellards nor Glen would let me know [about Plainview] is understandable after their gorilla tactics here in 1939. The thesis on the Gila Pueblo professional bushwhacker and credit-stealer [Sayles] is airtight. It may take me ten or twenty years to wrap up, label and deliver the evidence on "varmint" like that, but eventually they will get their just deserts in language everyone can understand.

Letter from Curry Holden to President W. M. Whyburn dated January 11, 1946:



I wrote Dr. Ray in regard to the rumor we had concerning the disposal of his collection...He has beyond all doubt made a profound contribution to North American Archeology. His work is recognized and quoted both nationally and internationally. He is now completing a comprehensive study of all of his discoveries. The manuscript is now in the stages of final revision. As you know, we have partially financed his work during the past two years. It is our intention to publish the manuscript when he has it ready for publication. We should do everything necessary to secure his collection of materials. With his collection and his publication our Museum could become the sole repository of information about a prehistoric race which may have been contemporary with Folsom man. This is the only archeological project upon which we could be exclusive. All the work that we have done heretofore has been in fields shared by one or more other institutions. But the Abilene man is exclusively Dr. Ray's project.

Letter from Cyrus Ray to Curry Holden dated April 22, 1946:

Sunday I packed about 8 skulls including the 7 feet deep one from Matthews Ranch, the 10 feet deep long bones from Matthews Ranch and the skull with *Dryopithecus* dental pattern. These valuable specimens should be in secure museum hands...Outside of myself, there is no one here who can appreciate their priceless value to science. But vandals would get them to sell if they can break into the cases. If Texas Tech will make me a satisfactory offer on them we might leave them there. It seems that Texas schools have a lot to spend on sports, which don't amount to a tinkers-dam, but not too much in saving irreplaceable scientific values...Smithsonian has some of my specimens which they valued highly enough to place in a vault during the War. Of course they would like to have these also.

Letter from Cyrus Ray to Clarence Webb dated August 27, 1945:

Dr. Webb you are an unusually facile writer and very thorough, and your articles need little editing. If everyone worked over their material as well, it would simplify my editing very much. It seems to be much easier for some persons than it does for others. Still I put in a lot of work on the Bulletins as one ought to do a good job.

Letter from Cyrus Ray to Curry Holden dated December 6, 1946:

You had better come by here on Sunday Dec. 15th when I can talk to you about the materials you are to get. However if I am not here the boxes which are ready will be put on and under the long table in the south end of the barn and Mrs. Ray can give you the keys to get in. I had not gone through my boxes of Folsoms since a certain Boston fellow examined them but three of them are gone, and no one else has had access to them, but will search again for them. The same rascal got two mammoth's teeth from me in 1938 for examination and never returned them.

Letter from Cyrus Ray to Curry Holden dated December 6, 1945:

This evening I made another search and found my Folsom points which had been missing since last summer. Last night I thought every possibility had been explored but went through everything again tonight and found them. Having as I thought lost these valuable specimens on the verge of delivering them to you worried me so last night that it kept me awake a long time. So disregard what I said in the other letter although I do not think any better of the fellow's honesty because of past shenanigans, but this time I was mistaken.

◊ A. T. JACKSON ◊

A. T. Jackson, born in Central Texas in 1895, was another of the "Pioneer Archeologists" who was not an archeologist by training. He was a prolific journalist who published extensively in

1920s Texas newspapers and magazines on many subjects. A small sampling of his hundreds of early articles includes:

- “Uses of Cacti”
- “Digging up History”
- “Art of the Caddo Indians”
- “Little known Historic Buildings”
- “The Mexican Freighters”
- “The First Americans”
- “Towns that Disappear”
- “Pioneer Gourd Utensils”
- “Many Things are Thrown into Wells”
- “Petrified Forests”
- “Packsaddle Mountain”
- “If General Houston Returned”
- “Origin of Town Names”
- “Weather Lore”
- “When Camels Came to Texas”
- “Indian Picture Writing”
- “Historic Relics Should Be Preserved”
- “The Romance of Yucca”
- “Pollution of Streams”
- “Whittling as an Art”
- “Destruction of Crops by Grasshoppers”
- “Game Laws”
- “Ghostliness of Ghosts”
- “Early Texas Forts”
- “Natural Beauty versus Progress”
- “Indian Days”
- “Relics of Early Days”
- “The Granite Region”
- “Double Barrel Pioneer”
- “The Lowly Mesquite”

Doctor Pearce recognized Jackson’s eclectic interests and writing ability and hired him about 1930 to head the University of Texas archeological excavations during the decade of the 1930s. One of their first collaborative projects was an extensive excavation of the magnificent “Fate Bell Shelter” in Val Verde County. Jackson conducted the fieldwork and they jointly published the work in 1933 (Pearce and Jackson 1933). Some of Jackson’s early

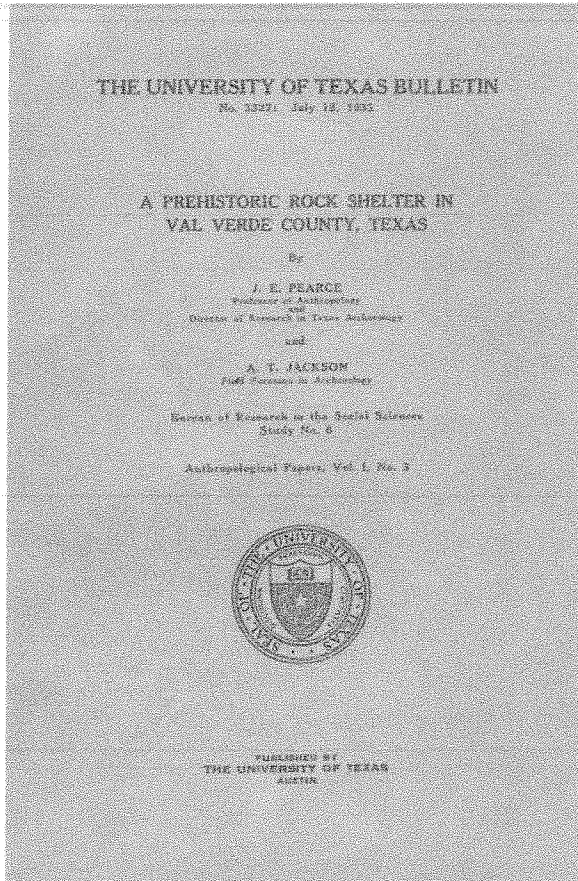


A. T. Jackson. Courtesy TARL.

work was concentrated in the Caddoan Area of Northeast Texas. Bulletins of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society in the early 1930s contain regular articles by Jackson on Caddo pottery, pipes, ornaments, ceremonies, and burial rites (Jackson 1933, 1934, 1935, 1938b).

Then, in 1936, the University cut out research funds and McAllister wrote to Frank Setzler at the Smithsonian:

I’m writing in regard to Jackson. I believe you know him; the man who has been working with Pearce seven years. He is out of a job. This department has been cut off from any funds for archeological purposes whatsoever. Jackson’s job ended September first [1936]. Temporarily Jackson is employed by the Centennial, but on January first he is definitely out. I just thought that if there was any possibility of your coming into the Texas field in early Spring, if you



Cover of *A Prehistoric Rock Shelter in Val Verde County, Texas*, concerning the Fate Bell Shelter excavations.

could use Jackson as a field foreman... From all reports he is hardworking. I think he has fairly good field notes...If you should need the man, I think you would be damned lucky in getting someone with as much experience...Jackson has only had a high school education. He was in the war [WWI]. In the early days of the depression is when Pearce found him. Though he has had no university training, he has read widely in archeology. I think he is somewhere in his late thirties. The lack of a degree has given him some feeling of inferiority, but you know what I think of degrees.

Setzler replied to McAllister on September 25, 1936:

About a week ago I had been asked by Guthe my opinion of Jackson for assisting Dellinger at the University of Arkansas in writing a report on the work he has

been doing the past few years. This might be a thankless job, and yet one in Jackson's predicament might be glad to jump at the chance. I have known Jackson since 1932 and have been interested in his work and problems. I think he has steadily improved his field technique. If funds were available and if my reports were up to date, I should be only too glad to employ Jackson in a continuation of my researches in the Big Bend country. I feel that he is very conscientious in his work and that I could depend upon his observations. I shall try to find an opening somewhere for him...He should be an excellent man for assisting in directing the excavations of some of the Spiro mounds, which I believe Clements has now undertaken.

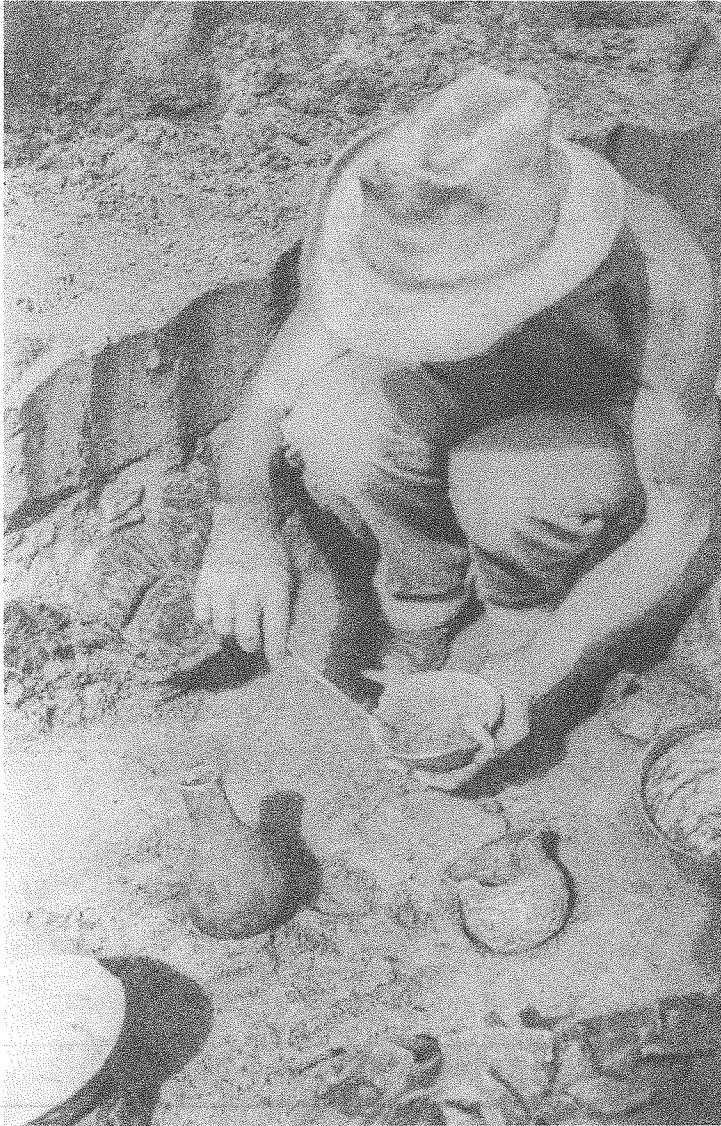
In November, Jackson had still not found an archeological job, and McAllister wrote to Setzler:

Another thing which has depressed me in the last few days is in regard to Jackson. I really believe that Pearce has moved heaven and hell to do what he can to keep him on. I hear that Jackson is knifing Pearce. He is now in Globe [Arizona] and I hope he gets a job there. We lose a man who knows more about the possibilities of field work in Texas than I believe anyone else.

Perhaps Jackson's best known work, and his most important contribution to Texas Archeology, was his volume on *Picture-Writing Of Texas Indians*, published in 1938. This incredible volume remains a primary source on pictographs and petroglyphs in Texas.

An article in the Austin paper dated September 24, 1938 said:

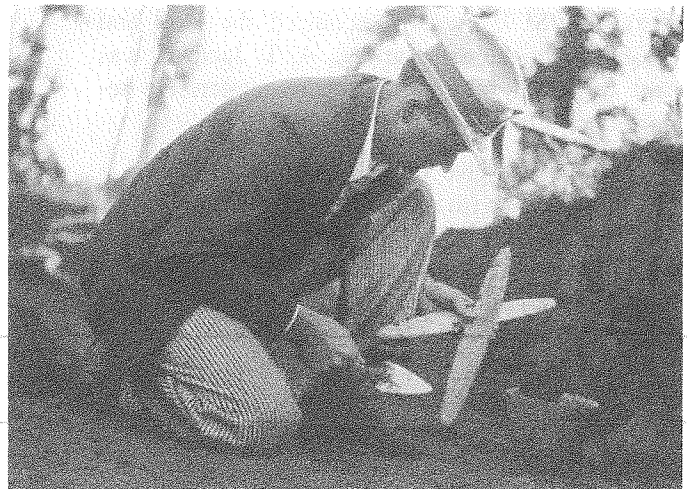
Modern name-and-initial scratchers are ruining important records left by early inhabitants of Texas, A. T. Jackson, field archeologist of the University of Texas, reports. He advocates creation of state parks at the principal sites of pictographs and petroglyphs in order that they may be preserved. There are 195 sites in the state where picture writings now exist. They are found in 44 of the state's 254 counties. Red, black, yellow and white



Taylor Farm (41HS3) Excavations, Harrison County. Courtesy TARL, D-704.

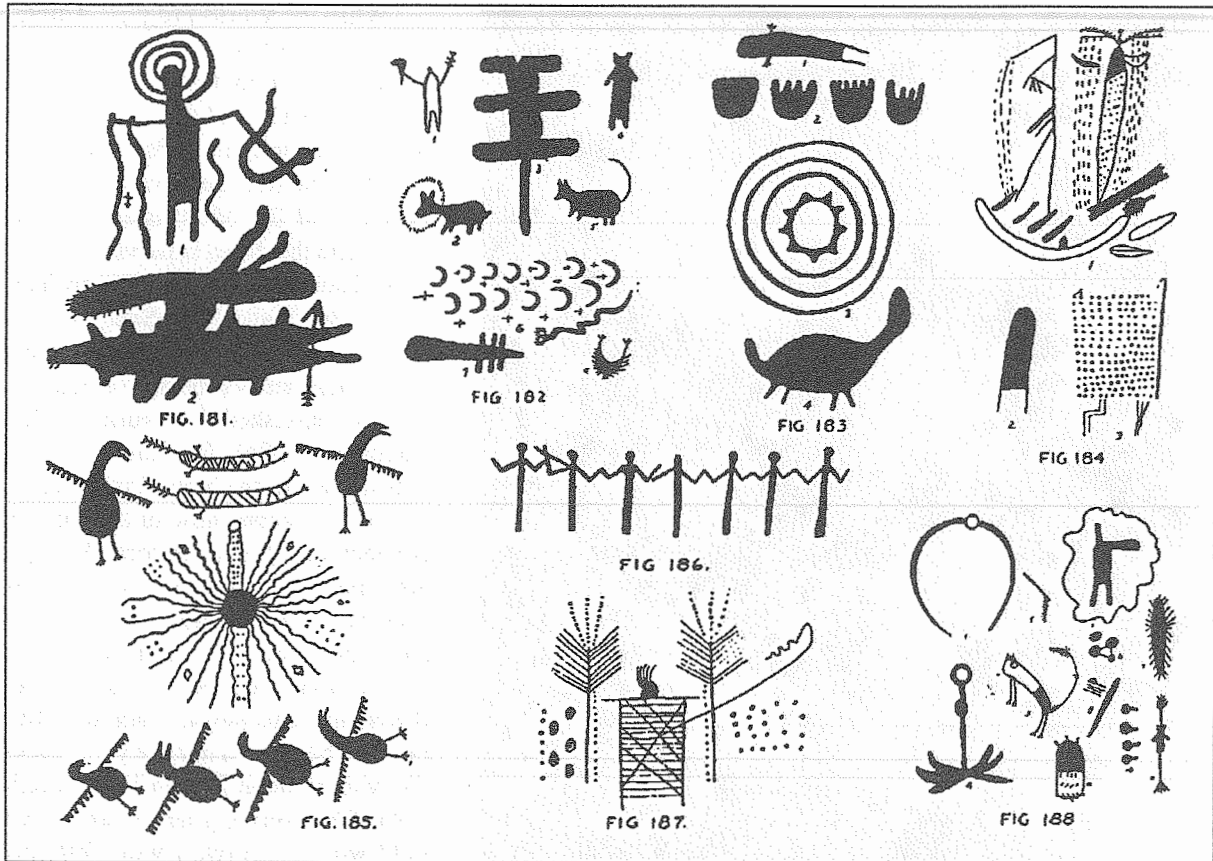
are used in the pictographs. Human figures have been found less than 3 inches in height and some are 10 feet tall. Animal figures range in length from 2 inches to 7 feet. [Jackson's dream of preserving some of the rock paintings in state parks was partially realized with the creation of Seminole Canyon park in 1973 and Hueco Tanks park in 1969, but Hueco Tanks rock art has badly deteriorated in recent years from an uncontrolled onslaught of rock climbers and picnickers.]

When the Works Progress Administration (WPA) started funding projects through the University of Texas in 1937, Jackson was back on the payroll, and the projects were under the nominal supervision of Dr. Pearce, and Dr. McAllister after his death, and the direct supervision of A. T. Jackson. One of the first projects was at the "Fall Creek Sites" on the Colorado River above Austin, where Lake Buchanan was being constructed. Jackson published that work in 1938 (Jackson 1938c). In January 1939, Jackson wrote to Cyrus Ray: "This is one of four crews now in the field in connection with this project [WPA]. I visit the crews periodically to supervise the work. At any time you have the opportunity, we shall be glad to have you visit the crew in the Possom Kingdom Lake basin. I am sure Mr. Fox will be pleased to have you." Jackson wrote Glenn Martin in February 1941: "Answering your inquiry about field work in Texas, I will state that we now have three crews in the field: one working a large mound near Alto in Cherokee County [George C. Davis site], one working in Marshall Ford Basin above Austin [Lake Travis on the Colorado River], and another excavating a large shell heap on the coast in Aransas County [Kent-Crane site]."



Galt Farm, Burial #2, Franklin County. Courtesy TARL, 41FK2-2.





A. T. Jackson's *Picture-Writing of Texas Indians*, showing his meticulous copying and classification of rock art.

True to his eclectic bent, in October 1941, Jackson applied for a Guggenheim Memorial Foundation writer's grant to be used in writing a book on "Frontier Defense."

In April 1940, with excavation of the George C. Davis Site in full swing under the supervision of Perry Newell, the Texas Forestry Service at Texas A&M University acquired the land and closed-down the excavations. A. T. Jackson was sent to A&M to investigate the matter. He reported to Gilbert McAllister:

This is to give you a brief summary of my recent visit to A&M College, looking toward the securing of permission to complete the excavation of the large Indian mound on State Highway No. 21, six miles southwest of Alto, Cherokee County. I first had a long talk with Mr. Curtis Hesse, of the A&M Museum, who was very helpful and extended every possible courtesy. In the forenoon he accompanied me to a conference with Mr. E. O. Siecke, head of the State Forestry De-

partment, a branch of A&M College. In the afternoon Messrs. Siecke, Hesse and I had a conference with President T. O. Walton. Mr. Siecke explained that he had given orders to his men, to notify our Mr. Newell to discontinue digging in the mound proper and confine the work to the adjacent area...President Walton stated that he felt the mound should be preserved, particularly since it is on a state highway and will be viewed by many people. I pointed out that the mound could not yield the greatest good to the history of the state unless it is carefully excavated; that if this is done, the mound is then restored, and the resulting information published, the state will derive the maximum benefit from this important landmark. It was further explained that the reason we had not at first planned to restore the mound was because the landowner's representative at that time specified that the dirt must be spread. That was the condition on which



we were permitted to excavate the mound. I added that now the land has changed ownership, we will gladly agree to restore the mound. This can be done with considerable accuracy, since we have a contour map showing the elevation at the base of each stake in the ten-foot squares. [A seven-page confidential report on the matter is attached to Jackson's letter. Eventually an agreement was reached to restore the mound and turn over some of the artifacts to Texas A&M, in return for resuming the excavations.]

The perplexity of projectile point typology was already emerging in Texas in February 1940, when Newell wrote Jackson:

I have not yet studied your proposed classification of projectile points as thoroughly as I hope to do, but here are my reactions to it on the basis of the study I've given it so far. The first impression I got was that the system is cumbersome.... Even in the laboratory it seems as if the system might involve more work than its advantages justify.... It looks as if, rather than simplifying the work of the analyzer, it may take him more time to fit specimens to the classification than to group similar points and describe the groups with their variants.... The two laboratories in which Strong's classification was designed and first tried discontinued its use after a short time, finding it unwieldy, and I am under the impression that Strong himself does not use it any more. While the contemplated quadrangle system of site identification was not mentioned in your letter, I should nevertheless like to say in passing that it was tried for something over a year by the Nebraska State Historical Society and then abandoned in favor of the simpler and more readily used county symbol and number system.... After all the above adverse criticism I suppose some constructive suggestions should be in order. However, to be perfectly frank, I don't know what to suggest.



Crew at Falls Creek site, 51B1-9, Llano County, 1937. Courtesy of TARL.

After academically trained archeologists like Krieger, Kelley, and Campbell began working at the University of Texas, and the WPA projects ended, Jackson was finally out of archeology. However, he continued his research and writing for many years. In 1953, he wrote to Ann McClain:

It happens that I have brief data bearing on the importance of Jefferson [in Marion County, Texas] in the days before the coming of the railroads. You no doubt have much the same type of material, but it is offered you for whatever it may be worth historically. Glad to give it to you. About 1873, George W. Cowan was a mailcarrier between Jefferson and Quitman. The trip, on horseback, required three days going and coming. Shortly thereafter Cowan freighted from Quitman to Jefferson. He told me of long wagon trains going to Jefferson to secure supplies brought in by sidewheel steamboats. He declared, in conversations with me, that sometimes there would be more than 100 wagons lined up at the outskirts of Jefferson. Often it required a full day of waiting in order to load with supplies.

A.T. Jackson died in Austin in January 1974 at the age of 79 years. His extensive collection of personal papers including field notes, journals, and correspondence was donated to the University of Texas archives by his family.

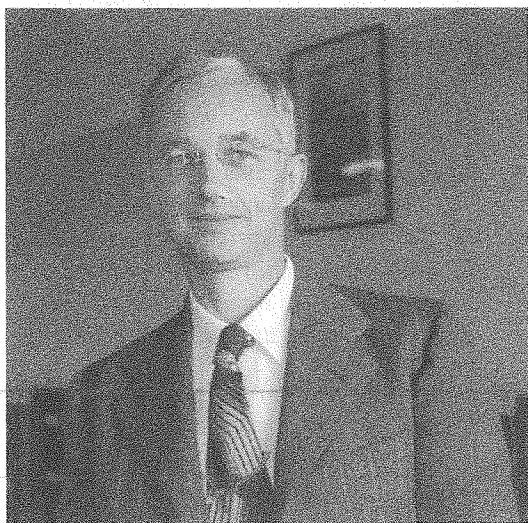
**J. GILBERT MCALLISTER**

An interview of J. Gilbert McAllister by Curtis Tunnell, was done at his home in Austin, Texas on November 24, 1980. The McAllister home in west Austin was a cozy retreat with well tended potted cactus around the yard. Oriental antiques filled the house, including Cora's extensive collection of netsukes. Gilbert's office room was filled with filing cabinets which bulged with field notes, correspondence, and photographs from his work with the WPA, Kiowa Apaches, Archeology in Hawaii, and many other topics. Stored under the house were many additional boxes of carefully inventoried papers. Gilbert had inherited many treasures from Dr. Pearce, including his favorite oak chair.

**University of Texas and Texas  
Memorial Museum**

"I was born and raised in San Antonio, and spoke German before I spoke English. I came to the University of Texas in 1922. I took anthropology courses under Pearce and Engerrand at that time, and Mayhall was an assistant. Pearce was a phenomenal individual. I was doing graduate work at the University of Chicago from 1928 to 1935, and two of those years were in Hawaii doing fieldwork in archeology.

I got back here in '35, and that was about the time that they were really getting along with the plans for the Texas Memorial Museum. The museum was actually built in 1936,



Dr. J. Gilbert McAllister, 1949. The University of Texas at Austin, Department of Anthropology, #60.

'37 and '38. It was in the summer of '38 that it was opened. It was started as a Centennial project in '36 but they didn't actually get it built and opened til '38. The dedication and opening of it was in '38.

Pearce had written articles as early as 1914 about the need for such a museum. We had a little anthropology museum down in the basement of Pearce Hall that earlier had been upstairs in Waggoner Hall. You see Pearce wanted the museum to be related to class teaching, which I think it should be. And he wanted it on the campus. And one of his problems was that he fought for it on the campus, he thought that other location was too far off the campus and it was.

Pearce spent an incredible amount of time agitating for a museum, and he did have pretty good contacts in the Legislature. Pearce was very aggressive and he antagonized some people. Or he could be the most wonderful person you ever met. I don't think I was ever as devastated at a man's death. I was more emotional over his death than I was over my own father's years later, because Pearce and I were very closely associated. He died of a heart attack. Just dropped dead. He was sixty-nine. In 1938, October I think. The museum was dedicated before he died. The American Legion got tied up with the museum for some reason, I don't know how. Pearce of course antagonized the American Legion people and he was completely frozen out of the dedication. He left town the day they dedicated the museum because he wasn't invited. He was named acting director of the museum beginning that summer of '38, as I recall. He was never made permanent director. I thought he should have kicked them in the pants and told them to go to hell. The corner stone was probably laid in '36, or something like that. He finally moved over to the museum in the summer of '38.

He had been chairman of anthropology since its first existence. It was not anthropology, it was actually institutional history, originally. Some of the collections were marked department of institutional history. Pearce Hall was named for him after he died. It was the old law building and when the law people moved out to their new building then it became Pearce Hall. Tom Campbell was chairman at that time, so that would have been after '47."

### WPA Projects

“Under the WPA project we did the big mound in Texarkana, the Hatchell Mound I think it was called [see Creel 1996]. Beatty was in charge of that, Bill Beatty. And there was the Morhiss Mound out of Victoria which Duffen headed. Then we had the big project out of Fort Worth called Possum Kingdom. At the Possum Kingdom project there were two people involved, George Fox and Wesley Bliss. The WPA was closed in '41.

Hatchell was a very large mound, as I recall. All these guys were roaming around with wheelbarrows on trestles, very fascinating. Mr. Hatchell was very nice. He put up with this huge crowd we had there. It cluttered up his yard, and latrine facilities and all the rest of it, the guy was remarkable.”

An article in the *Austin State Observer* on July 7, 1941 says:

The need for money in the interest of national defense has caused the state-wide University of Texas WPA archeological program to close, Dr. J. Gilbert McAllister, University anthropology head and program director has announced. Closing of the project brings to an end three field exploration units, in East Texas, in Central Texas, and a reconnaissance unit in South Texas; and two laboratories, one in San Antonio and one in Austin. McAllister praised the WPA, which has extended over 30 months and has afforded employment to 176 men. A total of 476 sites have been excavated, resulting in the recovery of 166,789 specimens of flint artifacts, and 500,000 specimens of pottery. Field crews took 4,078 photographs and produced 14,760 pages of field notes. In the laboratories, 161,276 specimens have been catalogued, including 947 skeletal remains. A number of publications will be forthcoming, McAllister said.

### George C. Davis Site

An article in the *Sulphur Springs News-Telegram*, for December 14, 1939 says:

A systematic and intensive effort to penetrate the mystery of the Cherokee

County Indian Mounds, which have defied solution for more than two centuries, has been undertaken by a group of scientists working under the sponsorship of the University of Texas. A crew of 35 WPA workers, directed by Perry Newell, recently began excavating the largest of the three mounds about six miles west of Alto. Completion of the project, which will require at least ten months, is expected to provide historians with valuable data regarding the life and habits of early Texas tribes. Two of the mounds are in the conventional shape of a dome. The third and largest is L-shaped and probably was used as a ceremonial temple.

McAllister continues:

“Then there was the Alto mound. It was owned by Davis, an out of state guy. One thing that shocked me was how much of Texas was owned out of Texas. We had to get permission from people, foreigners, out of Texas. But we had a very nice relationship with this Alto man. We fenced off the area where we did the digging and went on with it. And we learned that Texas A&M was dickering to buy the property. And when A&M bought the property, they pulled rank. They came in on a Saturday or Sunday and closed the mound. They were vicious.

A&M closed it down, and I got this long distance call saying they actually destroyed some of the stuff there. Some little petty official came in. ‘This belongs to us now and we are going to close it.’ Well Newell called me and there was much telephoning back and forth. There was a guy by the name of Siecke [pronounced Sicky], and I’d like to mention his name because, he was a bastard if there ever was one at A&M. One of these pompous asses. All communications between Siecke and myself had to go through the president of A&M, and Rainey the president of the University [of Texas]. Rainey was about as uninterested in the problem as anybody could be. So I wrote all the letters in Rainey’s name and my initials were at the bottom of the letters. And we had to be very official about it. I went out there to close the excavation. I got out there about a half-hour before Siecke got out there. And a delegation of the guys from Alto, Texas met me, about five or

six of them. We kept Alto, Texas alive during those depression days. These guys got a salary of \$35 a month. They were doing an excellent job. And they met me and they were practically crying. They wanted the mound kept open because that was the only income they had. And by the time Siecke got there, I kissed that guy's ass and I kept the mound open. I gave A&M all the artifacts and we got all the records. All I wanted to do was keep these guys employed and keep the mound open. That was income these guys needed to buy food. So we kept the mound open.

But it had a very peculiar pay off. Later, one of my former students became their publicity director there and they wanted to do a film on their forest reserve [tree farm]. They wanted to begin the film by showing the Indians building the mound. So they got a bunch of A&M cadets, put them in G-strings, and against the setting sun of the pine forest, they had these guys going up and dumping these little baskets of soil, building the mound. I'd give my eyeteeth to see it again. And my former student wrote me and was embarrassed by the correspondence he saw in the files. And there was a guy with the name of Hesse at A&M who had charge of their museum. He was on our side of the fence also and he got fired because of it. And so my former student apologized for the way we were treated and I think we got all the archeological stuff back. But A&M had their little tight fists on it for a period of time. We knew A&M was dickering to buy the thing but it never occurred to us that a sister institution would give us any trouble."

#### **WPA Labs at Little Campus and San Antonio**

"After Pearce's death is when we got space at the Little Campus. What we had was one room under a corner of the Little Campus. It was a basement room where the steam pipes ran through and was dripping water and there was water on the floor a good deal of the time. The room was hardly the size of my living room with a couple of little bitty windows up there. It was an incredible place. It had really been a storeroom. And Pearce had wanted the larger upstairs part but any number of people were fighting for it. Goldsmith of Botany

wanted it; Sellards wanted it for some reason. I think Economic Geology wanted it. So I went to Simmons who was in control of it and had these plans that indicated what I wanted. What we had was shown in green, what we wanted as a minimum was in red. And I got what was red. He was really impressed, and we got it, and there was a lot of antagonism because we got the place. It was fairly large compared to the basement room. It was big rooms and high ceilings. One of the things I remember about the place was the way the toilets flushed. They had a little container of water up high on the wall, and you pulled the chain and down came the water.<sup>4</sup>

And we had one for women and one for men, as I recall. We couldn't have men and women using the same toilet facilities there. I think we put iron bars over those windows on that back porch. But when we got that space, that was something. That must have been after the WPA era.

So our lab for the WPA was installed upstairs, and then we had the lab in San Antonio. Jack Laughlin, he was a swell guy, ran the lab down there. There were two WPA projects that Mrs. Elenor Roosevelt saw in her Texas tour and one of them was our San Antonio laboratory. She was taken on a tour through that. And Jack was an extremely efficient individual. In the lab they were cleaning specimens and cataloguing and doing that sort of thing, and all of that material should be out at Balcones [TARL] now.

Jack Laughlin was a poor guy and he wasn't able to make his living and go to the law school so he ended up taking this job with us. He had worked in our laboratory here before he went to San Antonio. And that was a prize project. You see the WPA headquarters for Texas was in San Antonio. There were industries using our laboratory there as a display. Mrs. Roosevelt saw that lab, and Jack took her around. But in about 1940, Jack realized it was a dead end and he thought the Air Corps would be the thing to get into. So I recommended him and he got into the Air Corps and was one of the first guys killed in 1941, the end of '41. In the Japanese attack on the Mollucan Straits, Jack was killed. The airfield in Del Rio is named Laughlin after him. It just ticked me off, because I felt like I had been responsible, in a way, for Jack's death."



WPA Laboratory in San Antonio in the late 1930s. Courtesy of TARL, #16.

A letter from A.T. Jackson to Jack Laughlin dated December 9, 1940, reads in part:

We are pleased to learn that you are advancing nicely and trust that you will make an ace flier. The project is progressing as usual. You have been greatly missed in the San Antonio laboratory, but Mr. Stephenson [Robert L.] is handling the work in a very satisfactory manner.

McAllister continues:

“The Morhiss mound material probably went to the San Antonio lab since it was very close there. I don’t know whether the Colorado River material did or not. Possum Kingdom, I think came here. Then we had the Alto Mound and we had the one near Texarkana, the Hatchell mound. Those were the ones going when I took over the WPA work. The WPA people were very nice—after I blew my top about all the red tape which hampered us in every conceivable way. We just had a lot less red tape. Before that you couldn’t even hire anybody, you could just send applications to Washington and presumably they would do the choosing. I objected to that. I planned to do the choosing of those that were helping me. And we were cleared on that. I think it was largely because Frank Roberts knew me, and knew that I wouldn’t pull any shenanigans.”

### Field School at Polvo and Summer at Shafter

“In about ’48 or ’49 there was a field school out at Polvo, Texas. Kelley had charge of it and we had quite a bit of fun with B. J. Oliver who was on that dig. Bill Shackelford, the real estate man, he and his wife-to-be Dawn, were on the dig. Oh yes, that was quite a dig! Many funny things happened. Seems like things were always going wrong. One day some blowup occurred but I happened to arrive without knowing the blowup had occurred. Kelley had left for some reason and they thought I was taking over. I wasn’t taking over because Kelley came back that evening.

A gal by the name of Elizabeth Funk kept a diary on the thing and if anybody could get Elizabeth Funk’s diary, I grant you that would be fantastic. [Chuckle.] She told me a great deal, but some of the things that went on were unbelievable. I wonder what ever happened to Elizabeth Funk?

Kelley wanted somebody around that summer and he said ‘you haven’t been out of Austin in a long time.’ And I said okay, find me a cool place that’s cheap. We paid \$15 a month rent for an apartment in an old manager’s house at Shafter. It was a fantastic spot. We took camping things with us because it was unfurnished. We had no idea whether we’d stay two or three days or a week. We stayed three months! The dig was only the first six weeks and I was amused because they all came through Shafter, on the way out. And they all stopped over to tell me goodbye. We became very integrated into the community there. One of our best friends was a border patrol agent who would bring us antelope meat out of season. I got involved in a lawsuit, when a young boy was injured by a drunken anglo driver from Marfa, and I called LULAC for help. We found peyote on the protected sides of some of the hills there, and I sent in an article to some botanical journal. In the evenings, Cora and I would walk up on the hills there and watch the sunset over the Rio Grande and over the Chinati Mountains...it was just beautiful. The evening before we left, we were



taken to the school, and they turned on the lights and the whole community was sitting there. They had been practicing this program with dances and songs, and everybody did something. They asked us to do something, and Cora and I tried to do a square dance, but we tripped over each other and they just rolled in the aisles. When we left, they all cried and we cried and it was a very emotional situation.”

### Peyote Bill

The *Del Rio Herald* ran an article on April 7, 1939 which says in part:

Whether called a “diabolical root” by the missionary, or a “potential medicinal drug” by the scientist, the Peyote cactus is still used in religious ceremonies by the Kiowa-Apache Indians, Dr. Gilbert McAllister, University of Texas anthropology professor, declares. In line of research, Dr. McAllister some years ago [1933-1934] spent twelve months living with this tribe of Plains Indians, and even participated in the dusk-to-dawn Peyote Ceremony with his hosts. Throughout the elaborate ceremony the Indians eat the Peyote which produces dreams and sensations of eerie unreality.

McAllister continues:

“I worked with the Kiowa Apaches in Oklahoma back in '33 and '34.

Then in about 1969, I was called on to testify down at the state capitol. There was a bill that would allow Indians to harvest and transport peyote for religious purposes. Senator Hazelwood was chairman of this committee, and he was a very reactionary individual. He found out through his secretary, whose son was in one of my classes, that I had been to peyote meetings. So he wanted me to come down and testify. There were Indians here not only from Oklahoma, but from Minnesota and all over. They all had to get peyote from Texas, because the major source is in that area out of Laredo. After I testified, there were half a dozen Kiowa Apaches came up to me. They had just been kids when I was there in Oklahoma, and now they were middle-aged men. We had a very emotional reunion. I sang the peyote song for them, and they wanted me to

come back to Oklahoma with them. It turned out that I was the only person to testify. Each of the Indians was asked to give his name and the area he came from and which tribe he represented, and that took over 45 minutes. But the bill passed to make possession of peyote legal for Indians to use in religious ceremonies in the Native American Church.”<sup>5</sup>

### Tribute

One of Dr McAllister’s students, James Presley, wrote an article in the *Dallas Times Herald* on June 22, 1986, entitled “A Patriarch of Lessons and of Life”:

McAllister has had a significant, if largely unheralded, influence on Texas in this century. There exists now a family of McAllister students...Bill Moyers, Chad Oliver, Ronnie Dugger, Kenneth Wheeler, Nick Johnson, Olivia Vlahos, Roy DeForest, and the list grows long of men and women noted for thinking for themselves.

Gilbert McAllister was a walking legend on the Austin campus—a scrappy, outspoken professor who provoked students into thinking for themselves. “Education by irritation,” as he called it, became an unforgettable, sometimes emotional experience. A slender wisp of a man, neat, ramrod erect, seemingly filled with endless energy, wearing rimless glasses over bright blue eyes, and passionate about justice and common sense... .



Gilbert McAllister (right) and Sam Blackbear by Wichita house, 1933.

Gilbert was a demon on racism, proclaiming long before it was fashionable—when it was risky, in fact—that there are no superior, inferior races. He documented time after time, the importance of social and cultural factors and how infinitely malleable we humans are, which left us hope and an escape hatch—we could change! Many did change. Texans who had never questioned the cultural bigotry they had soaked up since birth, encountered their first shocks in his classes.

Dr. McAllister died at the age of 89, was cremated, and some of his ashes remain with Dr. James Presley.

### • T. N. CAMPBELL •

As a graduate student at The University of Texas at Austin in the late 1950s, I came to know Dr. Campbell very well. He was a kind and gentle scholar who always had time to advise and discuss things with students. While serving as Chairman of the Anthropology Department, Dr. Campbell would often sell a stack of books out of his personal library, to students for 25 cents each. That is where I got my copy of *The Romance of Archaeology*. When I asked him to do an interview in 1989, even though he was 80 years old, he insisted on taking a bus down to the capitol complex and doing the interview in my office.

Interview of T. N. Campbell done by Curtis Tunnell on June, 23, 1989, in Austin, Texas.

### University of Texas

“I was born in Knox County, in a place called Munday, in 1908. There wasn’t any archeology in the area. I never saw arrowheads when I was a kid. There were no collectors there. I went two years to McMurray College in Abilene, and then transferred to the University of Texas in 1927.

I was an English Literature major, but I just couldn’t find very many people I liked in that field. A friend of mine had met Doctor Pearce, and he said, ‘You know, from what you read about, and what you talk about, I think you’d like anthropology.’ I said, ‘Would I?’ And I did!

There were only three people who taught anthropology that I can remember, Pearce,

Engerrand, and a woman by the name of Mildred Mayhall. The anthropology department originally was called Department of Institutional History. But, Pearce was trying to promote his department. He was a vocational schoolteacher, and was principal of Austin High School at one time. He had worked at the University of Chicago, and had an M.A. from there under Friedreich Starr. Pearce never got a doctoral degree, but everybody called him Doctor Pearce, and he never corrected them. He was more of a philosopher than he was a scientist.

When they built the Texas Memorial Museum, Pearce had worked for years and written many pamphlets about the need for such a museum. As a matter of fact, when he made excavations, he was more interested in collecting large quantities of material than he was in facts. He was into the placement of the artifacts into a museum. This was his prime concern. He was trying to put Texas on the map. Tragically, he died not long after the museum was finished. Although, I think he was director of it for a short time. I think Sellards replaced Pearce when he died.”

### George Engerrand

“Engerrand was the more electrifying person in the classroom. I wrote his obituary for the *American Anthropologist*, and I tried to check on how many of his students had become anthropologists, and I got up into the 20s. People who had started out with him and had gone on to be anthropologists. Engerrand was trained in botany and geology at the University of Bordeaux. He had the equivalent of a master’s degree in both fields. He was in France at the time of the famous Dreyfuss case, and he left France in protest. He went to Belgium and never went back to France.

In Europe, Engerrand was interested in the Paleolithic and he wrote a book on the subject which won a prize in Brussels. He later wrote a book on physical anthropology which was published in Barcelona.

There was an opening for a geologist in Mexico City with the Mexican Geological Survey, and he joined that organization and became the head of the topographic division. For years, he made topographic and geographic maps in Mexico. He had to leave Mexico when the Porfirio Diaz regime came in. Engerrand told me that he made a tactical error in Mexico. He

really was against Diaz, but he was part of the Diaz regime because he had to eat. He said, 'I was given a commission in both armies: The Revolutionary Army, and the National Army, and when they came to war, neither side wanted me.' [Chuckle.]

He taught in Mississippi for a number of years, and then Alfred Kroeber wrote him and told him that there were two jobs open that he might be interested in. One was at Berkeley, and the other was at Austin, and he took Austin.

Engerrand was very good at languages, and could get along in eight or ten different ones. He once told me that he learned Russian while he was jailed in Mexico City. Later, I was invited out to his house for dinner, and I said something about this. His wife, who was a Belgian, said, 'You old faker! You were only in jail overnight.' That must have been the quickest mastering of Russian on record! [Chuckle.]

Engerrand was very amusing. When he got to be about my age now, he was quite realistic. He knew that he wouldn't last very long. And he started compiling his own obituary notice. When he got all this together, he came to me one day and said, 'I'm going to leave this with you. I won't say a word. I'm just going to leave it with you.' I realized what it was and thanked him for it and kept it. He gave me copies of a lot of his Mexican publications, some of which are very rare today. I gave them to the government of Mexico some years back, because they were more important down there than they were here.

Neither Pearce nor Engerrand would be at home in the world of anthropology or archeology today!

McAllister was originally from Austin, and he went to the University of Chicago for his Ph.D. That was when Malinowski and Radcliffe-Brown were feuding at Chicago, and there was considerable intellectual ferment there. So he was with a generation of students who benefited from the renaissance at the University of Chicago."

### The Depression

"I did odd jobs, anything I could find around the University of Texas. So it took me about three years to do two years of work. And when I finally did graduate in 1930, the Depression

was really going strong. I taught high school in Snyder for a while, and then moved on to Albany. Albany was an old ranching town, and they didn't have any trouble paying their teachers. Everybody else got paid in script, but I got paid money in Albany for three years.

Finally I came back to the University and did two years of graduate work. I took an M.A. in anthropology. Then I was lucky enough to get a tuition-paying scholarship to Harvard.

I wasn't too much involved in the WPA work at UT, I just knew it was going on. I did benefit to the extent that I was paid 35 cents an hour for mending East Texas pots. I visited the Rob Roy site that Kelley was working on, once. And I did dig at one site in the summertime in East Texas, at a place called Keith Mound [41TT11; see Goldschmidt 1935]. We cut a whole section through the mound.

I knew A. T. Jackson fairly well and took trips with him occasionally. He was not a college man, but was very intelligent. Basically, he was a journalist, or newspaper man. He was also an accountant. Pearce picked him up because Jackson was writing feature stories on Texas history in various newspapers."

### West Texas Work

"I was in Cambridge from '36 to '38, and then ran out of money. The department said, 'Well, let's see if we can get you an anthropology teaching job. Come back in about a month.' I went back in and they said, 'You know, as far as we can tell, there isn't an opening for a single anthropologist in all of North America.' [Chuckle.]

About that time, Charles Kelley got the Peabody Museum to put up a little money for some work in western Texas, and he invited me to come along. He said he could pay living expenses, but nothing else. I told him I would take anything so I could eat. I spent about a year there with Kelley in Brewster County. That must have been in 1939.

We worked primarily about 25 miles south of Alpine near a local elevation called Elephant Mountain. We lived in tents. When I went into town, I would just take my bedroll and sleep in the museum at Sul Ross College. It was just like a hotel to me. Don Lehmer was with us and he participated in the report that Kelley and I wrote on that work [Kelley et al. 1940]."

### Harvard

"In 1941 World War II started and I went into the service. I got released from the Air Corps in 1946. The last six months in the service, I began reading all the archeological literature I could get my hands on. I went back to Harvard for a year and a half, and by about 1947 I had submitted my thesis and defended it successfully.

I was real good at taking shorthand and my notes on courses at Harvard were used by Ph.D. candidates for 15 years. [Chuckle.] The two dominant men at that time were physical anthropologist E. A. Hooten, and an ethnographic specialist by the name of Albert Tozzer. Clyde Kluckhohn was a social anthropologist, Carlton Coon, a Middle East expert, and Morris Ward knew archeology from the Middle East to Japan. He was fantastic.

One of the courses that Hooten taught was human skeletal anatomy. Once a week he gave you a quiz on bone identification. But what he gave you for identification were tiny pieces of bones...just scraps. Some of us got to know him very well, and we would say, 'Dr. Hooten, we think you better get some new bones. We've learned all of these bones personally. You have got to get new ones.' Hooten said he didn't have time to get new bones, so he just took a hammer in there and made them smaller. [Chuckle.]

Tozzer had two courses. One on Aztec Middle America, and the other on Monumental America. There was a blackboard that went all around the room and he came in an hour early and filled the blackboard. He was very good, but dull as dishwater in the classroom, reading from those notes. He would give lantern lectures on Mayan ruins. I remember once I'd been up late studying for exams and he gave one of these shows, and it was hot and dark in the room. I yawned audibly. He looked into this darkened room and said, 'Am I boring someone?' I should have said, 'Yes!'"

### Back to UT

"In 1947 I came back to the University. Kelley and I both got our Ph.D.'s from Harvard at the same time. I was invited to go to Southern Illinois University. That job which I turned down, Kelley later took.

When I got back to Austin, I decided I was going to salvage some of the digs that had been done in the Coastal area, largely because nobody else had bothered with them. Neither Kelley nor Krieger were interested in the coastal area, so I took what they weren't interested in. Actually I never did much work on the coast, I salvaged the work of others. But many of the sites that I've written up on the coast I never even saw. I just made use of the information on them [see Campbell 1947, 1952, 1956]. I made my doctoral dissertation out of that work. At that time there was lots of interest in connections between the Mexican area and the eastern United States, and the coast may have been one of the routes.

I served about 14 or 15 years as the anthropology department chairman here at UT."



Dr. T. N. Campbell in the 1950s, analyzing collections from the Texas coast.

### Kincaid Shelter

"Glen Evans excavated Kincaid shelter first. Then, years later, I took a six week field school back to the site. It had been extensively potted. In fact, some Folsom points had been thrown out by some early pothunters... really gold hunters. They shoveled out all the artifacts looking for gold, and they shoveled out several hundred dollars worth of Folsom points. [Chuckle.] They would be worth thousands of dollars now.

Evans had excavated nearly all of the interior of the cave. So what we did was to excavate out front. Most interesting was that artificial pavement where they had brought some rocks from the outside and paved around the water source inside.

Dee Ann Suhm was with me at Kincaid, and she also worked as departmental secretary for a while. She was often working late at night on that handbook. Jelks and Krieger came in on it, but the idea was hers!"

### Ethnohistory

"I guess as far back as the mid-1930s I was always interested in reading about the historic Indian groups. Then when they added a third volume to the *Handbook of Texas* [Branda 1976], they sent me a lot of articles that some of the historians had written about some of the Indian groups, and I complained about them so much. They were awfully poor. 'Well, why don't you do them?' So I got started at that. And it really got out of hand.

I have written about 500 separate little essays [see Tyler 1996, and listing in Collins 1999], and in order to do that I did an awful lot of reading. Anything pertaining to the historic period that recorded anything about Indians, I read. Then from that I went into the unpublished archival data. No one knows how many copies of Spanish documents, some of them originals, we have here. Its got to be in the millions. And I have gone through a lot of those looking for documents that relate to Indians. I have spent years and years doing that sort of thing [see Campbell 1988].

All of these numerous little mentions, allusions to, or brief encounters, don't really tell you much except a name here and a fact there...a particular place or particular time. But you put these details together and you can get some valuable kinds of information. Other kinds of information we will never get.

Much of what's known about our historic Indians has been pretty well sifted over and has been digested down to a very simple sort of primer. This is what everybody learns about. But it was ten times more complex than that! Over a period of several hundred years during the European occupation, there were hundreds of names of Indian groups here in Texas. You just simply have to deduce the

best you can, getting clues from various documents.

Most of the Indian names were strange to European ears, and you get a great variation in the way they're spelled. The copyists who made copies of documents in the early days made errors in copying. Even modern scholars made errors in typing. You're going to get many distortions of how names were spelled. I have collected over 75 spelling variances of a local group known as Ervipiame. Most of the Europeans didn't know beans about languages, particularly Indian languages, and cared less, really.

Of all the Indian languages that have ever been spoken in Texas, if we have half of them, I would be very much surprised. I think that Texas, in terms of its Indian populations, was somewhat like California. But there's a difference. The Indians of California survived up into the period when there were anthropologists and linguists. In Texas they died out earlier. California is known as an area of tremendous linguistic diversity. I think it was equally diverse here in Texas.

It's hard to do very much with languages that aren't still spoken. You may have only 18 words from this particular group, and 2,000 words from another group. A third group, you may have only one word.

It's amazing how little the Europeans recorded about the real behavior of the Indians. They considered them to be sort of like animals. And consequently, you get quaint notions about Indians recorded. Wherever Europeans went, you find a local folklore about the natives."

### Tonkawas and Others

"The area from San Antonio and Austin over towards the area north of Houston, in that alternating grassland/woodland area before you get to the piney woods, according to local Anglo-Americans was the homeland of the Tonkawa. But the Tonkawa were like most of the Native people here, they were from someplace else. There's no question about that any longer. Tonkawa were recorded north of Red River long before they were recorded here. There were a lot of local bands who for years have been classified as Tonkawa, who really weren't 'Tonkawa.'

There is still a lot to be learned about who really were the indigenous people to this area



and who were the migrants coming in. If you want to distinguish between the migrants and the native people, you've got to look closely at northern Coahuila. In 1716, there was an expedition led by Domingo Ramón who visited a place called Rancheria Grande. He was carrying with him a fresh batch of missionaries for East Texas missions who had previously served at the Guerrero missions in Coahuila. There were several hundred Indians at Rancheria Grande, and the missionaries recognized some of these Indians. They were refugees from the Guerrero missions. The missionaries called them renegades for giving up the Catholic religion.

Shortly after San Antonio de Valero was built, a lot of Indians that had been in Rancheria Grande came there and were promised admission. There was a separate set of mission registers for them. We have baptisms, marriages, and burial records for seven or eight years, and the Indians are identified by ethnic name. Many of the names recorded there are linked with Coahuila. A frontier military inspector described Rancheria Grande, and he said, 'There's a collection of Indian remnants there.' There were 28 different groups.

Linking up archeological sites having European objects to historic Indian groups is very difficult. One of the main things we have to realize is that the historic period is relatively short when compared to sites where you get vast quantities of materials that accumulated over thousands of years. In a short period of time, there is not much that accumulates in one particular spot. Also you have to take into account that a lot of the material culture of the Indians sort of phased out of the picture once they had access to European gadgets. So trying to connect the archeological record with Historic Indian groups is practically impossible, really. That, in turn, sort of makes it easy to get away with saying almost anything.

In the mission registers you have individual Indians recorded when they came to the mission and were baptized. The record gives his name and his affiliation as the Spanish knew it. These occur by the thousands. Valero, which had more Indians and a greater variety than any other mission, has the best records. The friars sometimes recorded the same individual when he was baptized, when he married, and when he died. So you can identify individuals by their names through time. Individuals were usually

recorded by a Spanish name, and sometimes by a Native name as well. So we can collect a lot of Native names.

In this period, Bolton said they were all Tancoa, because they were at the missions with the Tonkawa. But the only Tancoa who were at the missions were some who, at one time, were carried through on a chain gang to Mexico City. Bolton just jumped to the conclusion that these were all Tancoa speakers. These names were not Tancoa at all. As a matter of fact, there are two frequently occurring consonants in these names that do not occur in the Tancoa language.

Some of the things that the historians write about the Texas Indians are...quaint!"

### • JOE BEN WHEAT •

While working at the Adair-Steadman site in 1972, I made a trip to Boulder, Colorado, to talk to Joe Ben about his Folsom collection from the Chispa Creek site near Van Horn, Texas. He was most hospitable and made the collection accessible for study. During subsequent visits, we became friends. I never saw Joe Ben that he wasn't wearing some pieces of Navajo jewelry. His office and his home were distinguished with the soft warmth of Navajo rugs and Saltillo serapes.

Interview of Dr. Joe Ben Wheat by Curtis Tunnell, done in his home in Boulder, Colorado, on April 8, 1988.

### Beginnings in Archeology

"I was born in Van Horn, Texas on April 21st, 1916. My interest in archeology began quite early. In a small town like Van Horn, there was really very little to do in the way of structured entertainment. So all the kids would band together and go do things after school and on weekends. And one of the things which we did was to go out into the sand dunes around town and hunt for arrowheads. When I was about seven years old the older kids began to take me out with them to help hunt arrowheads. And so I became very much interested in this. But instead of just being interested in collecting rocks, I became interested in the kind of people who produced these things and how they made them and were they all the same age and so on. So very shortly after I began doing this I became

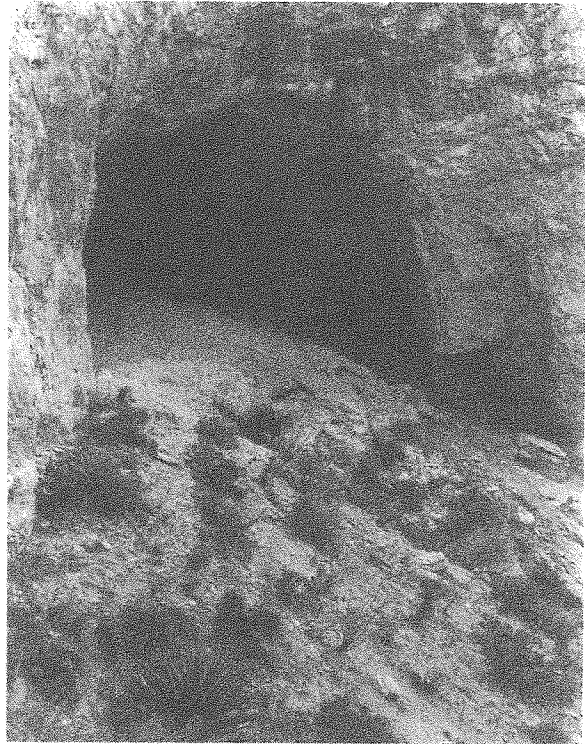
interested in what I would think of today as archeology even though it was not a known term in the area where I grew up.

As time went by, a number of people influenced my thinking in terms of going into archeology. One of these people was Ted Sayles who was an amateur archeologist in Abilene. When Gladwin set-up Gila Pueblo in Arizona, he employed Ted Sayles to make an archeological survey of Texas [Sayles 1935]. I was about 13 or so at that time and so when Ted came through the country his procedure was to contact local collectors, wherever he went, and see what they had collected and begin to work with them to get sites located. I took Sayles out to a number of the sites where I had been collecting and talked to him about the materials.

And then there was Victor J. Smith who was a teacher at Sul Ross Teachers College in Alpine. He was basically a teacher of shop and mechanical drawing. And he got his degree at the University of Chicago. While he was there he had studied anthropology with Fay Cooper Cole. And I think he had actually worked on some of Cole's early projects. At any rate, he had some actual training in archeology and so he was doing archeological work in the Big Bend area. He had worked a lot around Alpine, some around Marfa. And he had heard of a big cave over at Van Horn which us kids had dug around in ... potted essentially. And so he came over and I took him out to that cave and my first actual archeological expedition was with Victor Smith when I was about 13 or 14. I worked with him when he came over in the summer and we worked several weeks at a stretch actually doing a first class job of excavation and recording. That was Bat Cave, of course.

I wonder how many "Bat Caves" there are in the U.S.? This one was in the east face of the Diablo Mountains, about 20 miles north of Van Horn. And you approached it from the back. You went through Allamore, Texas and then on up into the top of the Diablo Mountains and then down the side of the east face and into the cave which faced south in a little canyon that ran east-west into that face. A huge cave. I say huge, it was probably a hundred yards long and had stalactites in the center of it and little pictographs in there. There were layers of materials and I've often thought there was a good chance that there might be Paleoindian material under some of the earlier rock fall. I don't think anyone has ever looked for it. Along

Wild Horse creek there are Pleistocene playa lakes and there's Paleoindian stuff all along the course of those creeks. The cave overlooks that whole valley.



Bat Cave (41HZ20), where Wheat worked with Victor Smith. Sul Ross #136.

So we went out and camped up on the top of the mountain and then every morning we would go down, it was about 500 feet below the top, and we hiked down. Victor Smith set up a grid system in there and we dug it stratigraphically. This was a dry cave and you know it's very difficult to keep all your levels straight because the masses of fibrous material go up and down, they're not easily confined to a superimposed grid. But it was nevertheless a well-controlled excavation. And all that material went over to the museum in Alpine, and it's there today. But Victor Smith later on had cancer and committed suicide. The notes that he left apparently are not in the museum.<sup>6</sup> One time long after that I was concerned about the location and the condition of that material and I stopped by Alpine just to check on it and see what was there. And I would hope that eventually those notes do come up, but probably his son has them or they are in the family. And they ought to be gotten back together.

Victor Smith was kind of a little fussbudget. Everything had to be precise and nailed-down, you know. He was quite a small man, but with tremendous resilience in digging and so on, and very curious about everything. He was really a sort of meticulous scientist. Had he gone on in archeology, I think he would have been a top-flight archeologist. But since there apparently were few positions open for archeologists in those days, why he went on into this other business. And of course he set up the museum at Sul Ross and was the mainstay of the museum for many years and of the West Texas Scientific and Historical Society. And I think his contributions, considering the time and place, were quite remarkable.

Ted Sayles was also a very bright guy. Again, he came from an amateur background. He had long worked with Cyrus Ray and all the people around the Abilene country and had lots of experience before he ever became employed as a professional archeologist. And in fact he didn't have any professional background. He had learned to write as he was writing for the *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society*. He was a much more careful observer I think than Cyrus Ray. Ray was given to wild enthusiasm and not very strict scientific insight. But Ray was really the man who started that society. He was the guy behind it in the sense that he excited people and he bullied them into things. Ray was as much a boy as any person I've ever known. But with all of that he was curious and he knew how to get people involved. He involved Frank Roberts, for example, in some of the Abilene, so-called early man sites, the burials. But he wasn't always scrupulously honest in what he found and reported as I discovered when I was working in the Abilene area myself much later. But at any rate, he and Ted Sayles worked together and of the two, Ted I think had the greatest integrity and so when he did his survey of Texas and later of Chihuahua, I think he did a first-class job, considering what was known in those days. He made some sense out of a lot of things that were just sort of floating, before.

Another person that was involved in inspiring me was Jesse Dave Figgins of the Denver Museum of Natural History. This was very shortly after the discovery of the Folsom bison. And so he was looking for Folsom points wherever they might occur. And again as Ted Sayles

did, he had heard that I had a collection so he came up and we went over my collection. He didn't find any Folsom points. It was many years later before I found the first Folsom material in that country. But at any rate, he was there and he encouraged me to, you know, to look for these things.

And then old A.T. Jackson, he was another one. He came out like a lot of other people who were doing surveys and that sort of work. And he came out and I took him to Hammer Handle Canyon and one of the pictograph sites. In fact just about all the pictographic sites in the Van Horn area, I took him out to them. Later on, of course, he came and worked up in the northern part of Culberson County digging some caves up there [Jackson 1937]. I was not involved in that.

I joined the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society when I was a student at Texas Tech. Curry Holden got me involved with that. I went back and bought early issues of the *Bulletin*.

And then there was Frank Setzler of the Smithsonian. When he came out, again, he looked at my collection and I took him out to some of the local sites. And he not only encouraged me, he sent me a lot of bulletins from the Bureau of American Ethnology. He had asked me to write to him when he got back into Washington and he would send me whatever bulletins he could that might pertain to work out there. And so he did send those to me. Interestingly enough, when he retired about 15 years ago, he wrote to me and asked me if I would like to have that letter back that I had written to him when I was 15 years old. So I told him yes I would like to have that and I got it and it made me start thinking about the kind of contacts and support that kids coming up in archeology get from the people who ultimately become their colleagues.

I graduated from High School in 1933 and there were four people in my graduating class, a big class. [Chuckle.] I decided I wanted to go to college right away and my father had died when I was 13 and my mother was running the hardware and lumber company. So she was very supportive of this, and the only school that I could really afford at that time was Sul Ross State Teachers College over in Alpine. So my freshman year I went over there and of course studied with Victor Smith, and about half way through the year he assigned me a task of designing exhibits for the Museum. So that was

good experience. During that year we did some excavation in caves around Alpine. That was about the time when he was finding sloth bones in some of the caves, with basketry in the same caves and so on, and of course his preliminary report on that, so far as I know, is all that's ever been done [Smith and Kelley 1933]. Nobody has ever pursued it.

The year I was there, which was '33-'34, they had a branch meeting of the American Association for the Advancement of Science there at Sul Ross. And that brought in quite a lot of people involved in anthropology. J. Charles Kelley was teaching at Sul Ross at that time. Of course I had known J. Charles for some time before that because we grew up only 90 miles apart, he was in Balmorea and me in Van Horn. At any rate, along to this meeting came Marie Wormington, that was when I met her. And a number of other people who were involved in archeology.

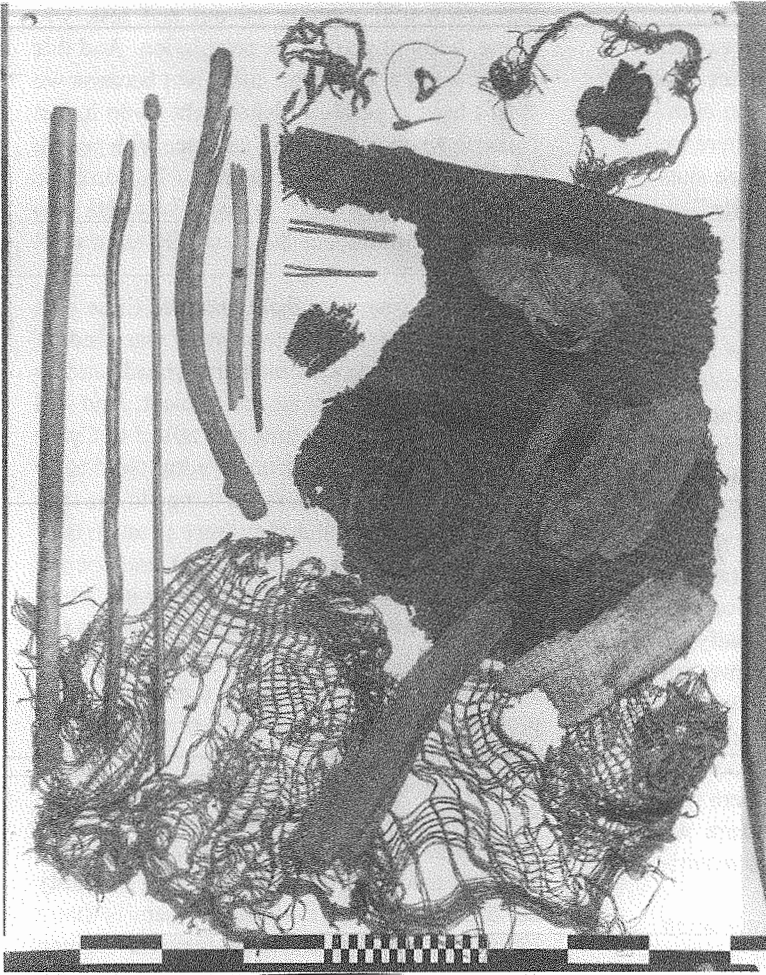
W. C. Holden was among those people and Holden asked me to take his class which went to Mexico and this was a summer course every summer. He alternated one summer in Mexico and then one summer digging over in the Pecos Valley in some of those sites east of the main Pueblo area toward the Panhandle-Plains. So he invited me to go with him on this trip to Mexico which I did in the summer of '34. And we went down and we spent about two and a half months down there. We rented a home, big place in Mexico City out near Chapultepec park and we had a cook. So there were about 30 of us and at that time we were going out and looking at all the Mexican sites and so on.

So in the fall of that year I transferred to Texas Tech. And they actually had a program in archeology there even though it was in the history department and was mainly run by Holden. They had a couple of other people on the faculty who taught little courses, I would



Hall Cave, Joe Ben Wheat Collection, 1933. Sul Ross #46.





Perishable artifacts from Brooks Cave.

say in anthropology. So that was my first formal education in anthropology, with courses in American Indians and so forth that I took from Holden and his associates in the history department. That year we did a lot of exploration out in the high plains around Lubbock. We went over to the Clovis site which was very new at that time, and we dug up an elephant in the Panhandle country. And I worked in the museum in a basement there. They had gotten enough money to build a basement but didn't have enough money to build the top two stories, so that's where the museum was and I worked there.

Howard had been working at the Clovis site and it was about that time that the mammoth association was found. But Howard had done a lot of survey work in that whole Blackwater Draw area and he had been checking erosion areas more than he had been actually digging.

He did do some digging there... the first dig at Clovis."

### Lubbock Lake

So when I came back in 1937 after graduating at Berkeley, why I worked for a year and a half just trying to make enough money to pay off my college debts. And about that time, early 1939, Holden got in touch with me and offered me the job of WPA archeological foreman for Texas Tech. And it had been a year before that, so it would have been in '37 or '38, that the City of Lubbock decided to make this lake in the old river bed of the Yellow House branch of the Brazos and they had dredged the thing out and in the process of dredging there was an area where they had gone through masses of bones. Thrown out on the side along with the bones was the most beautiful Folsom point I have ever seen to this day, and two or three other Paleo points. And all the local amateurs around Lubbock had come out to gather up these pieces. At any rate, that was the reason for the WPA archeological research project. And so we went

out and looked at the site. But of course the water was still in the lake at that time. So we laid out a pit that was as close to where they had hit the bones as possible outside of the lake and started digging. So we got down and then of course we hit water level and we couldn't go beyond the water level. We tried to persuade the Lubbock Lake people to give us a pump to pump the water out. We couldn't get that done so we moved into another place where we thought maybe we'd be able to get those same levels but above the water lines. We dug a series of pits inside the old enclosure. And then finally we dug a massive trench that ran all across the valley clear up onto the edge of the caprock. And in the process we hit several horizons of late pottery cultures, and below that Archaic, and then down in the very bottom we found material which had to be of Folsom



age although we never found a Folsom point in place. We found gravers and bones of extinct animals and so on. So we had the evidence that they were there but we were not able to complete it. So at the end of our first season there we closed that up and then I did two or three sites near Lubbock, a cave site and an open site.”

### Abilene Work

“And then I went on down to Abilene and I worked along the Brazos there just north of where Ray had worked. By WPA contract we were not allowed to go into the next district, we were District 17, so we got as close to it as we could. Actually there were two or three sites that Ray had tested and found stuff in. So we excavated the Hodges site and it was a stratified site [Wheat 1940]. We dug 26 feet before we got down to the lowest level. And virtually all of it was Archaic or later. And when we got down to the very bottom we found some stuff that looked vaguely early but really we never found anything to match the ages that Ray had proposed for these lower things. Then there was another site, the W. A. Myatt site where we again found stratified basically Archaic materials [Wheat 1947].

Dr. Ray assumed there was a correlation between depth, and perceived age, plus the fact that he had peopled the area with Neanderthals because some of the skeletal material that came up in that country had curved femora. He had assumed that the femora were curved enough that they couldn't walk upright. So he had assumed a great age for these and he had found the so-called Abilene point in some of the deep gravel, 25, 26 feet deep and so these had to belong to the Neanderthaloid population of the area. He had this whole scheme laid out. So Ray didn't really believe the ages that I was assigning to the strata.

We had a quarrel later which was very interesting. In walking through the fields and so forth, just looking up and down the river, I could see several slabs sticking out of the ground on top of the banks of the Brazos. So I assumed that they had to be burials because that was the so-called slab burials that they had found so much of in that Abilene area. I got permission from the landowner to test one of these things and tested it without even contacting Cyrus Ray. And when he found out about it he was furious

that we would actually go out and test, you know, without getting his permission. And this was actually a very tense time. Not because we didn't have a perfectly legal right to do it, but because when you work in any area with people who have locally vested interest why you have to get along with them in some way. He was kinda territorial about that...awfully territorial! [Chuckle.]

We dug four sites that contained these slab burials, and in the stone cysts I was finding bones, tools, little stemmed arrowheads and so on, and they were not all that ancient. And so I took the points in one time and talked to Cyrus Ray about this and he actually admitted that he had found some of the same things in his cyst graves but he knew that they were so much later that people had to have come back and opened up the cysts and put them in later. That's why I said earlier that his intellectual honesty was not very great, I think. But at any rate, the stone crypt burials were all late. I think they were probably no more than 2 or 3 or maybe even 4,000 years old.

But those were some interesting burials. Some of them were secondary burials in which there were the long bones stacked up and then the skull upside down on top of these. Probably the most interesting thing about them is that a lot of them showed mandible removal. I mean the mandibles simply were not there and it reminded me of some of the tribes in New Guinea that remove the mandibles and they use the mandible in a remembrance ceremony that goes on for a year or two. I'm not implying that was exactly what this was but it must have been some kind of a trophy. And why the mandible rather than the whole skull, for example? But at any rate, several of those had the mandibles removed. Ray was not happy about my finding those burials!”

An article in the *Lubbock Avalanche Journal* dated November 10, 1940 reads in part:

Seventeen Plains Indian burials dating back to Pre-Comanche tribes have been excavated at various places along the Brazos river east of Anson, by a Texas Technological College sponsored, WPA project. The skeletons will be brought to the West Texas Museum for restoration, by Dr. Joe Ben Wheat, project supervi-

sor. Artifacts were rare with the burials, Wheat said.

### River Basin Surveys, Addicks Dam

Wheat continues:

"It must have been October or November of '46 and the AAA [American Anthropological Association] was meeting in Chicago that year and so I went to that meeting. I met Frank Roberts there, and he hired me to start the River Basin Project in Texas for the Smithsonian. They'd already been working in the Missouri Valley but they wanted to expand into Texas and so that's what I did. I went to Austin and set up headquarters there and then went on out to Houston and that is when I did the Addicks Dam survey.

The University of Texas gave me laboratory space out in a great big old building just off campus. It was a museum property I think they called the Little Campus.

We did the survey first. Just Pat [Joe Ben's wife] and I did that. We roamed up and down Buffalo Bayou and the other creeks, located the sites and did the survey. We found two sites that were going to be disturbed and/or covered by the water. Actually these were runoff retention dams rather than reservoir type dams. They were just to prevent flooding. I reported to Frank Roberts that we were now ready to dig a couple of sites that needed to be gotten before the dam was built. And he said well, we are low on money, see if you can get money from the engineers. So I went over and talked to the engineers. The man that I met was Col. Kenneth Hagy and he had been a funeral parlor attendant in civilian life and then in World War II he had been pulled in to become an army officer. He was a very officious, very spit-and-polish officer. He concluded that we could apply for money to dig, through them, but it would take months and months to accomplish this because we would have to write letters back to the Corps of Engineers in Washington and get clearance for the project and all that would have to be approved through a chain of command.

There wasn't that much time so I asked if I could speak to the commanding officer so he at least would know what the range of the project was before I submitted all the applications and the paper work. He reluctantly agreed and I did

get to talk to the commanding officer. He had been in the Corps of Engineers a long time, and he knew what he could do and what he couldn't. The first question he asked me was what do you want and I said money. And so he kinda grinned and said, 'Well what do you want money for?' So I told him that we wanted to dig these sites that were being jeopardized by the Addicks Dam. And he said, 'Well what will you do with all that stuff?' And I said well it will go back to the National Museum. And he said, 'What do you expect to find?' And I said oh we'll find arrowheads and pottery and bone tools and things like that. And he said 'and this will all go back to the National Museum?' And I said yes. He said, 'Will you find any burials, human burials?' I said we'll probably find a few. And he said, 'Well what will you do with those?' I said those will go back to the National Museum too. He turned around and said 'Hagy, don't we have a fund for relocating cemeteries?' Hagy's jaw dropped about three feet! And he said 'well yes, Colonel we do.' [Chuckle.] And so it turned out that they had funds for relocating cemeteries and those were the funds that we used for excavating archeological sites in the Addicks Dam Basin. And we did find burials and they really were relocated to the National Museum. The crew was assembled by the Corps. We couldn't go out and hire with their funds. But they assembled a crew for us and they were all local Blacks.

By that time we were using the metric system for measuring and I didn't expect people to understand the metric system until they had used it a bit. So I devised this 12 inches as 30 centimeters and we worked in 30-centimeter arbitrary levels on that particular site. And it worked out fine. Everybody did what they were supposed to do. We got one guy who got a little eager and dug a round bottom pit instead of leveling it off and so I told him he was supposed to keep that floor flat and I turned around and a few minutes later he was patting dirt back into it. [Chuckle.]

The Addicks Dam work proved to be very interesting [Wheat 1953]. In some ways it's the earliest stratigraphic work that had been done in that whole area. We found some things I think that we really had not anticipated like finding bannerstone type of artifacts for example, instead of the boatstones that Patterson had worked with for so long. And finding the rocker

stamped pottery in that site was a real surprise. There were a lot of elements that were not really anticipated but we got a very wide range of materials and of course down below the one site we found a Clovis point in that clay dune that acted as one of the residual levees along the stream. We found one-half of the base of the Clovis in the stream where it had been washed out and the other half in place in the clay dune. They fit together. They were two different colors. The weathering on them in the water and in the clay had made them two different colors, but they had in common a very shiny gloss. And after I was working on it for awhile, I looked at them and I said, I know where the rest of that is and I went over and picked it up and put them together and they fit.

We worked there for a period of months. I think maybe three months. We lived in a little two-cabin motel out near Addicks. The guy who ran this motel had a steak house and he was a German Jew and had been a refugee. He had these two cabins out there and that's where Pat and I spent our honeymoon. And of course there were those burials—we really had skeletons in the closet...and under the bed. But at any rate, when we finished that we went back to Austin and began doing the processing of the collections, putting pot sherds back together and measuring and photographing. And it was at that time that I got a letter from Emil Haury inviting me to apply for a graduate assistantship in Tucson. I thought he was one of the top people in the country and so I wanted to work with him. So I took this job and went over to Tucson. Bob Stephenson came in and took my place. I had to write up our work for the River Basin Survey and so I simply took the material with me except for the skeletal material which I sent back to the National Museum where it was later analyzed and published. But all of the artifacts and material I took with me and I used the report that I wrote up for my Masters Degree."

Joe Ben died in June of 1997 and his body was cremated.

### • ALEX D. KRIEGER •

I first met Alex at a TAS meeting in the late 1950s. Then, in 1964, he came to the Texas Memorial Museum to go through all the flint debris from

Friesenhahn Cave, looking for fragments which might show human workmanship. Because of his longtime hearing impairment, Alex's speech was seriously affected as well, and it took time and patience to communicate with him. This was even more pronounced 23 years later at the time of the interview. He could hardly hear me, even while I was shouting into his hearing aid, and he had no patience with written questions. For the most part, he told stories that he wanted to tell. Transcription of the tapes was extremely difficult, but I am confident that Dr. Krieger's words are accurately reflected in this draft.

Interview of Alex Krieger by Curtis Tunnell, done at Wimberly, Texas on November 4, 1987.

### Childhood and College

"I was born on December 11, 1911 in Duluth, Minnesota. My father's family were immigrants from Germany and my grandfather ran a trading post for the Winnebago Indians. The Indians were harvesting wild rice on the lakes and they used it as a substitute for money and could buy anything in the store. As a kid, I was interested in everything, geography, geology, zoology, and history. By the time I was 12 years old I had read something like 800 books. I graduated from South Pasadena High School in California in 1929.

Right after that, I went to Oregon and worked in a logging camp. I was only there about two weeks when some of the loggers were blowing stumps with dynamite. They planted dynamite under a stump, waited until I walked past it, and blew me about 50 feet down the mountain. Everyone thought that was funny. In the hospital I went stone deaf and had an infection in my right arm, with puss draining from my arm pit. Eventually my arm healed, but it was shriveled for a long time. One morning I awoke and my hearing had come back. So, I passed my entrance exam and went to Stanford as a freshman in 1930, where I worked waiting tables in sorority houses. I transferred to Berkley, where I took courses in Anthropology, and went on archeological digs at sites like Humbolt Cave. I graduated in 1936.

I met Professor Kroeber—you can't conceive the brain of that man—and he gave me a job opening crates that came from Egypt in 1900. I was unwrapping mummies and cataloging precious stones that were in the wrappings. So

for a year I catalogued Egyptian collections. Kroeber was an amazing man.”

### Work in Oregon and Washington

“In 1937 I got a job at the University of Oregon with Professor Cressman. I was given a cubbyhole to work in, and we took students out for summer archeological projects. One day I got a letter from an Indian relic society about the Grand Coulee dam being built on the Columbia River in Washington. So I took a Kalispel Indian from Montana and the magnificent sum of \$150 and caught a bus out to the Grand Coulee engineer’s village. The chief engineer was named Banks, and he stood up and shook hands and said, ‘What do you want?’ I said ‘I want to do a survey of Indian sites that will be covered by the reservoir.’ He said, ‘What do you need?’ and I said maps. Banks sits down and pushes a button and a man comes in. ‘Get Mr. Krieger a set of maps of the whole basin.’ Right off, I said ‘I also need a car.’ He said ‘Have a car ready tomorrow morning for Mr. Krieger and the Indian.’ I said, ‘I have money for gasoline,’ but he gave me a special credit card for the Bureau of Reclamation. ‘What else!’ I said ‘Well we might find some sites or burial grounds that are worth excavating, but it would have to be done in a hurry.’ So he pushes another button... ‘Get Mr. Krieger a work order for twelve men, and he can use them any time.’ All this was done in five minutes! He shook hands with me and said drop in once in a while and let me know how it is going. We stayed in a canvas teepee on the Colville Indian Reservation. And there were dances going on all the time, and songs and gambling.”

### Texas and the WPA

“Later in 1939 there was a telegram from Professor Gifford, he was director of the anthropology museum at Berkeley where I had been working. And Gifford said would you be interested in a WPA job at the University of Texas. Well, I’d do anything to keep alive. I didn’t know the first thing about the WPA. But I needed a job because I had already decided I couldn’t get along with Professor Cressman in Eugene. So I answered with a telegram to Gifford and said yes, I’d like to have it. And he was in contact with somebody either in Austin

or San Antonio. I think the main WPA office was in San Antonio. So the next telegram said to be there by July 15th, or something like that, if you want the job. And I answered that, I want to finish what I’m doing first. So about the 10th of August a student from Eugene came there on a bus and took over from me.

And then I took a bus and went to Eugene, packed up everything I owned, took another bus to Los Angeles, and then took another bus from California to Austin. About six days on buses and I finally arrived there. To this day I don’t know why the WPA, set up here in Texas, would ask for somebody from Washington. I haven’t figured it out yet.

I came to Austin and my first year here I thought I’d just die from the heat. I can take any amount of daytime heat but it’s the nighttime heat...you just lie in a bed naked and sweat all night long! When I got here, Mr. A. T. Jackson met me at the bus station. And he said I have a room reserved for you on the University campus. So he drives to what is called the Little Campus. And he showed me this “laboratory.” It was a storeroom and an office room. I found out later that the Little Campus was built during the Spanish American war. And in one of these rooms there were board shelves, and in the back was a pile of lumber and a keg of nails and a hammer and saw. Mr. Jackson tells me, straight-faced, ‘You’re supposed to build a laboratory here!’ But he said ‘Before you start with the hammer and nails, I want to take you to San Antonio.’ They already had a WPA office of archeology there, and it was a fairly decent laboratory. The man who was custodian or whatever of the San Antonio laboratory was named Jack Laughlin. He was an intelligent young man about my age. And I talked to him a couple of times. Then suddenly he enlisted in the Air Force before the United States was even in the war. You know there were hundreds of them, maybe thousands of them, that went to England to join the allies before this country was in the war. They just wanted some excitement. And he was killed. I don’t know exactly how. But you have Laughlin Air Force Base named for him. He didn’t know anything about archeology, wasn’t supposed to. He was supposed to take sacks of artifacts into his laboratory and have them cleaned and numbered and cataloged and the field notes would be typed up, he ran a good office. I would judge he was in San Antonio about a year and a half.

I came here at the end of summer 1939 and I was the second laboratory man for the WPA. Then Mr. Jackson drove me other places to visit excavation projects, like up on the Red River.”

### The Coral Snake

“And there was always that damned handicap, a roaring in both my ears all the time. There were days and nights when I couldn’t think straight about anything. You know what happened to me—a coral snake—on my right hand! I was riding mules around Sonora in Mexico when I was 20 years old. I was in the mountains in Sonora, a hundred miles away from any kind of roads, riding a mule. We came to the upper Yaqui River and had to get across. And these three Spanish-speaking Indians couldn’t swim. So I swam across with a rope to tie to a tree. They could get across on a rope but they couldn’t swim. So I got to the farther bank and was crawling up through grass when this Coral snake just bit down. I tried to get it off and finally I just broke its neck and pulled it off. And after I got the three men on the bank, they saw this thing on the ground and they warned me ‘careful, careful, culebra.’ And I said I already killed it and showed them the bite on my hand. All three of them took off their hats and made the sign of the cross, I remember that...my God! All night long they kept a fire, and once in a while one of them would come up and put his ear on my chest and he’d turn to the other one, ‘ya vive,’ still alive. The next day I walked with them for 20 miles to the nearest town. Then the deafness and the ringing sound began in my right ear about 14 months after the snakebite.<sup>7</sup> And, there was an ear specialist in Riverside in California and I told him the story. He asked me how long it was between the bite and ringing sound of my ears. I said about 13 or 14 months. He said, ‘I don’t doubt that caused it.’ He said the coral snake is the worst of all of them because it’s a small cousin of the cobra. And it attacks the nervous system. And then he said ‘Actually you’re very lucky that it didn’t affect your sight.’”

### East Texas and the George C. Davis Site

“I never did teach, all the time it was research. There were a lot of mechanical things to do because I was responsible for what was

coming into the lab. You could say I was doing research all the time because my mind worked that way. The first time I went on a WPA project in Northeast Texas, I went on over into Oklahoma and Arkansas and Louisiana and visited WPA projects in surrounding states. And I met a lot of people. Clarence Webb took me to help with his excavation and explained a lot of things to me. Yes, I spent half my time doing research in the lab. And there was a very intelligent Mexican man that I named foreman in the lab. He learned to go ahead with cataloging the specimens and filing them, and he caught onto everything right away so I’d leave him in charge when I went away. And north Mexico, I went there three or four times during the WPA years, and I must have gone to Mexico City a dozen times. And the Mexican government paid my expenses, the University wouldn’t. No, they wouldn’t give me ten cents for anything.”

An article in the *Daily Texan* dated January 17, 1940 says in part:

In a room at Little Campus five men are working over a glorified jig-saw puzzle with a more significant goal than just creating a picture. This puzzle is thirty thousand pieces of broken pottery which when pieced together will form another picture of the life of the Texas Indians. What Alex Krieger and his staff in the Department of Anthropology have proved is that Texas Indian pottery has not been influenced by the Aztecs, which for many years was believed true. We will consider ourselves very lucky, says Krieger, if we can get three or four full pieces of pottery out of these broken remains.

Even if a whole pot cannot be reconstructed, a reasonably accurate duplicate can be made if only half of a pot is there.

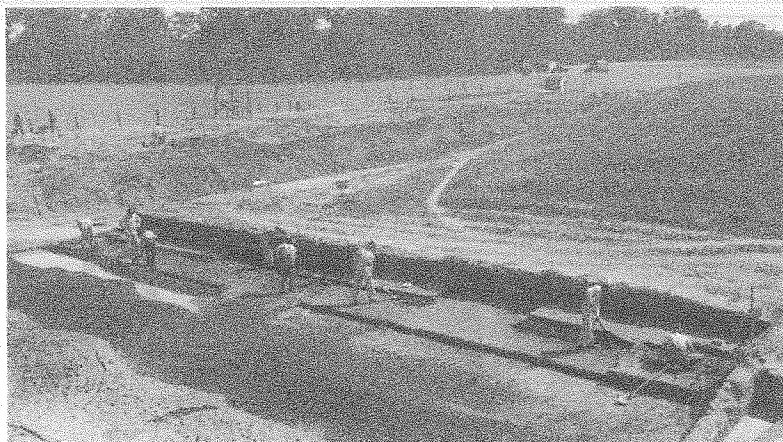
Krieger continues:

“One site I worked was the Davis site. I don’t know when it began, maybe a year or a year and a half before I came here. And it was done by Perry Newell. He was the field man who did the work. And I remember Perry came to the Austin laboratory for one year to write



up his report of that stuff. Let's say that Perry Newell and I were both doing research on Northeast Texas. Neither one of us did any actual mapping on the site and then his time was up and he joined the Navy to go in the war. I went on with research in Northeast Texas. I used his field notes of course and sketches of house floors, fireplaces, but I wrote the whole publication on the Davis site [Newell and Krieger 1949]. The Davis site was the beginning of my interest in connections between this whole region, and Middle American archeology. I saw things in that site and in other sites in Louisiana and Oklahoma, sites like the Spiro mound in Oklahoma, and I published on that too. And I kept saying for years that the Davis site had connections with middle America. And then when the corn was analyzed by an expert in Michigan, he could not distinguish between the charred corn at the Davis site and charred corn in Guatemala [Jones 1949]. I said Mexico, but he said no, it's not related to the Mexican corn but to the Mayan corn in Guatemala. That raises quite a problem. Where did the whole Mississippian culture pattern come from?

I used to attend the Pecos conference. Once a year the Pecos conference would meet somewhere in Arizona or New Mexico. In about the late '40s, I took some of the potsherds from the Davis site with me. A. V. Kidder, one of the best, had worked in the Southwest at first and then in Mayan archeology after that for the Peabody Museum. And when he saw some of what we call fine-engraved pottery from the Davis site he asked me where these potsherds came from and I told him East Texas. 'No, it came from inland Guatemala.' He said 'They're just identical,' and he pushed them around and looked at them and smelled them and one thing and another. 'These came from the Guatemala highlands.' And I said 'No, they came from a mound in East Texas.' 'Impossible!' Later on I



George C. Davis site excavations, TARL 41CE19-101.



House patterns in the George C. Davis site excavations, TARL 41CE19-106.

published a paper, I think in the TAS bulletin [Krieger 1948], on Middle American influences on the Caddo country."

In a letter from Krieger to J. Charles Kelley dated January 18, 1944, Alex said:

I finished the Caddo area [Davis Site] manuscript and am winding up some figures for it. It runs about 160 typed pages and 15 figures. Am also reworking all of Perry's typology, condensing his 17 "types" into 7 or 8 with more internal variation, and rewriting all his type descriptions, with his full agreement. It's a job, and I am also making drawings of all the vessel shapes and design variations, for since he left I've put together about 60 vessels enough to show shape. He had only 3 or 4.

### The Southern Cult and Culture Complexes and Chronologies

Krieger continues:

“Then I published another paper on the Southern Cult. Previous to that time it was called Buzzard’s Cult. I would say that’s a silly title. There was no buzzard connection. This was published in the *American Anthropologist*, this Southern Cult article [Krieger 1945]. At one of their annual meetings I gave the paper and I sort of scolded these people. Get rid of that buzzard! I showed slides of the designs on these enormous conchs, huge marine shells, and of potsherds excavated in the Spiro mound in Oklahoma. And dozens of those engravings are on the Spiro shells.

The Department of Anthropology, they never knew what I was doing and couldn’t care less, one publication after another. That’s the way Krieger spends his time over there, doing crazy things like that. The publication *Culture Complexes and Chronologies*, that was another one that nobody ever tried before [Krieger 1946]. The Southwestern people had their proven chronology. Dendrochronology has its problems too, but if you get enough dates from enough sites they work out. An error of 25 or 30 years is inconsequential. Whereas for the Mississippian cultures in the Eastern states, they had no chronology. That was before carbon 14. They had no chronology, just guesses. So what I was doing was checking the dendro-dates from certain sites in the Southwest and matching up pottery and other artifacts. Its all in the publication. Some pottery vessels and the shapes and designs on them match up between the southwest and Mississippian cultures.

Who knows but what Caddo men heard about these great cities and temples in middle America and they just walked there...or paddled a canoe around the Gulf. Somehow or other they hear about these marvels and say I think I’ll go there. That’s another way ideas can be transferred. There was no great wave of culture elements from middle America to eastern Texas, or eastern Oklahoma, but somebody might have just walked down there. What difference does it make if it takes them a year to walk there. We don’t pay enough attention to things like that. Of all the archeology I’ve ever read I’ve never seen even one sentence about individuals just traveling out of curiosity, or paddling simple canoes.

I started working on *Culture Complexes and Chronologies* in about 1943. That was my first major publication. My present wife was an undergraduate student at the time. [Marjorie Hays worked for Alex until they married, and went on to get a Ph.D. in Psychology from the University of Texas; Alex got his Ph.D. from the University of Mexico] And she came over to the lab at the Little Campus. I had most of the manuscript written but I needed some drawings done of pottery vessels and designs in the Southwest, in Texas, and in the Mississippi Valley. In the back cover there is an envelope with the maps. Well, my wife did most of this material that’s in the back cover for free. She just wanted to do it. And her sketches of the pottery vessels. Very well done. I didn’t meet her until 1944, so I had written most of the text by that time. And by the time the University published it, it was 1946. You know 46 means the year of publication, and then the next two letters indicate the sequence for that year. So it was the 40th thing they put out in 1946.”



Dr. Alex D. Krieger. The University of Texas at Austin, Department of Anthropology #53.

### Handbook of Texas Archeology

“Dee Ann [Story] was an undergraduate, maybe a junior, and she walked into the lab one day, looked around, this place needs cleaning up. She came back again with a mop and a broom and a pail of water. That was such a crummy laboratory in the beginning and nobody on the main campus cared about it. She just had an inquisitive mind. How she got really interested in archeology, I don’t know, but she

was involved from the beginning. I'd only known her a few weeks, or maybe six months, something like that, when she came to the little Campus lab with a manuscript, something like—she'd have to tell you what the original title was—"Archeology in the State of Texas," or "Texas Archeology." She walked in one day with a manuscript of three hundred and some odd pages. She was still an undergraduate. She said 'I'd like to have you read this.' Well, she made a lot of mistakes, but who doesn't, anyway? And I scribbled out corrections. I was editor for the publications of the Texas Archeological Society. We just talked about it and I made corrections or I put question marks in the margins. I didn't know anything about some parts of the state. Kelley was very jealous of anyone saying anything about the region west of the Colorado River and on beyond to El Paso. That was his part of the state. Tom [Campbell] was working the coast. But we managed to get enough information about the coastal strip and West Texas. Dee Ann got the information from them. In about a month somebody in the Anthropology department told me, you have no business writing about Texas archeology. You were hired to run this laboratory and not anything else. Well I broke that rule all the time, of course. But Dee Ann could talk to them and she had already read everything printed—a voracious reader. And then she had a conference with Charlie [Kelley] and Campbell. She got to know Clarence Webb in Shreveport. Pretty soon she knew more about the Caddoan area in Northeast Texas than I ever did. Anyway, we got together and decided we'd collaborate on a volume.

And the remarkable part was that I was used to working at nighttime ever since I was at Stanford and Cal. When I was pooped, I'd just go to sleep, and I'd wake up at maybe eleven o'clock at night and then I'd do my class work, class assignments until three o'clock in the morning. And then I'd sleep again. That was the pattern I worked with and I still do. Well Dee Ann and I would get together at the lab about nine o'clock in the evening and we'd knock off at 3 a.m., from 9 til 3. We did all this at night. I was already used to it, but she put her whole energy into this and it was considerable energy. So we worked at this five or six nights a week. And I didn't know enough about some parts of the state, but she and I had read everything and we tried to make a book out of it.

I don't remember whether we were aiming at the TAS or a publication from the University press. I don't think either one of us knew what to do about it. We were dedicated to finishing this job. Somehow we wanted to finish it and get it published. In 1953 I was editor of publications for the TAS, I don't know how long I was editor—several years. But anyway I talked about it with Curry Holden and other people and they felt it would be too expensive, it would break the society. Finally we had a meeting with some of the officials of the TAS and they were all just scared to death that it would break the society. I wanted 2,000 copies to be printed and the officers at the time didn't—too much! They finally agreed on 700 or 800 copies at \$5.00 a copy. Well the handbook was sold out in a couple of months, yes, just like that. And then the officers wished they had 1500 or 2,000 copies. They would have sold and would have made a nice profit for the society, but it was too late to change it. Dee Ann deserves a lot of credit. I've never seen an undergraduate student like that. I've been on about five campuses now and I have never seen an undergraduate write something like she did."

In a letter from Krieger to Wendorf dated March 30, 1956, Alex says in part:

Naturally Kelley would complain about the Handbook. Texas archeology waited for 15 years for him to produce something concrete in the way of types and distributions and data on his "researches." What has he produced except that mess published in 1940 and his little 1947 paper? How much longer will we wait for him to get out his stuff; another 15 years? He has no complaints coming, but of course he has to jump on us for doing anything at all without his permission and unpublished data. He actually told Ed Jelks a couple of years ago that he was "finished" with Texas archeology and didn't care what Ed or anyone else did with it anymore (he had been at Carbondale 3 or 4 years by then). I stewed a long time about whether or not to ask him to check on the types and descriptions before printing the Handbook, and since neither Dee Ann nor Ed cared to commit themselves on this, it was my responsibility to go ahead and print it in the form it

was. I could not bring myself to ask Kelley if it was all right, about [including] Central and Western Texas, after what he told Ed, and after archeology had had to wait so long for Kelley to get out anything usable. He took all his research material with him so we could not use it here, even if he had been willing. Damned if I think we owe anything to him.

### University of Texas

Krieger continues:

"I traveled around the state in that old UT station wagon. The Department was actually proud that they owned that station wagon, but it had to go to the University garage for repairs after every trip. When the Falcon [Reservoir] project began, the University furnished one shovel and one trowel and some paper bags. And they were so well satisfied—that's what got me! Charles [Lange] and Tom [Campbell] said what more would you want anyway?"

In 1948 I received the Viking Fund medal in New York City. And you'd think that would make a difference, but it worked in reverse. No, I was really an outcast after that. I'm not kidding you, those were tough years!

Between 1945 and 1956, I was responsible for Texas having local archeological societies, like one in Lubbock, one in Dallas, and one in Corpus Christi.

Meanwhile, in 1948 I began an excavation on the far side of the Red River. Maybe 10 or 12 miles from Texarkana [the Battle Mound site, 3LA1, in Lafayette County, Arkansas]. I asked the Wenner-Gren Foundation in New York for some money to excavate that mound. And I told them I didn't have any transportation, so they sent me a personal check for \$7500 to buy a truck and provide field expenses. Those people knew that these things cost money. As far as they were concerned you have to pay decent wages and you have to have transportation and field equipment. And I had a pretty good relationship there in New York, which made it even worse at UT. I took that check and bought a new Ford truck, and used it for work at Falcon Dam and Reservoir.

In 1941 the WPA organization closed down in the whole United States. And on the UT

campus everyone was let go except 10 people. I don't remember who, but one geologist, one paleontologist, one geographer, 10 people were kept on the University payroll after the program was destroyed and I was one of the 10. And another man named Marcus Goldstein was kept on.<sup>8</sup> He was a skeleton anthropologist, and he was supposed to finish up his measurements of human skeletons that came out of the excavations. He had quite a job because by that time there were hundreds of human skeletons. Most of them came out of excavations in the Colorado River digging. Kelley was the WPA man for the Colorado River basin. He owned the Colorado River and all the country behind the dam. He was a good field man."

Krieger continues:

"I was given another year to finish up cataloging, filing and cross-filing and so on. And at the end of one year some faculty committee voted to keep me on the University payroll. I don't know who spoke up for me, nobody in the Anthropology Department, but somebody else. I got a notice in the mail from the University president announcing that I was being kept on the University payroll as research scientist, grade two. At that time a research scientist was promoted from one grade to the next, about every three years. His record was reviewed and he was either promoted or dropped. I went from grade two to three and four and five and six. About every two years. I was in Austin a total of 17 years from 1939 to 1956, July of '56. Then I asked for a raise. I was getting a whole \$6,000 a year by that time. Texans kept bragging how rich their state was. But among 48 states, Texas was the 37th in per capital expenditures for public education."

### Archeological Societies and Collections

"I was always a member of TAS and some years I was either president, or vice president or editor or something. My main contribution was travel—travel to about three-quarters of the counties in this state, and running down people who had private collections of artifacts. I wanted to see the artifacts and I always had my camera set up and after I got acquainted I'd ask these people if I could photograph any





Miami Site, Cowan Ranch, Roberts County, Texas. TARL Photograph, G-1d-47.

unusual artifacts. And usually they'd say sure. And I had to assure them all the time—no I don't want your collections. You keep them. I want you to put numbers or letters on everything you find and keep a notebook and the date you found it and where it was, whose land it was on and things like that. And then, some simple rules of excavation. And, if you people want to keep other people from looting a site you patrol it. You and your friends get together and patrol those places and protect them from looting. In San Angelo one time we met at a school and there was a famous cave site about 25 miles from there. I said that place must not be looted by strangers. You people protect it. While I was talking, an enormous man about 6' 6" stood up, came up and slammed me on the back and he said, 'Doc don't give it another thought. Anybody messes around in that cave, we'll just beat the shit out of him!!'" [Big smile.]

Alex Krieger spent 16 years in Texas. Then after three years in Riverside California, he relocated permanently to the University of Washington

where he taught anthropology courses for 15 more years. Alex died of heart failure at the age of 79. He was cremated and his ashes scattered on the eastern slope of the Cascade range. As of March 1998, Marjorie Krieger was negotiating with the University of Texas Press for publication of an edited version of Alex's dissertation on the Journey of Cabeza de Vaca.

#### GLEN L. EVANS

One of the most pleasant interviews I ever conducted was with Glen Evans, done in Austin, Texas on February 14, 1978. Glen is a great storyteller with a soft authoritative voice, and he includes all the interesting details without prompting. His archeological stories are laced with geology and natural history. In recent years I have done brief interviews with Glen concerning his work at Fort Saint Louis. When I asked Glen about signing a release form for the interview, he said: "You can use this information any way you want to and at any time!"



### Miami Locality

"The Cowan Ranch project was at Miami, Texas. That's the Miami site, originally called Cowan Ranch [see Sellards 1938, 1952, also Holliday 1997:115-119]. Something interesting at the Miami site is a layer of loess. Beneath the elephant bones and separated from the elephant bones by an inch or two (at most), of the normal pond deposit. This loess went all across the pond and it wedged out at the edge of where the water was. This is in about eight or nine feet of pond deposits. It was a small pond that may have been more of a wallow, with seep water coming into it. The elephants may have used it mostly as a wallow. There were very few other bones, other than elephant there, and the other bones that were there were so deeply eroded that you couldn't tell what they were, they were fragmentary. There were five elephants that we were positive of. Five jaws. The bones were quite scattered. And there was only one that was articulated, or partly articulated. This was an accumulation of bones that was in very shallow water. And chances are that they were exposed to air off and on for quite a long time before they were eventually buried. And they had been pretty badly decomposed. And more recently they were damaged by the plow.

They were at that time [late 1930s] fighting these dust storms on the plains, and people were learning to use these deep-cutting plows, to cut great grooves orienting the rows in a direction at right angles to the gusts of moving wind. And this is how the site was found. The plow turned up some chunks of big bones. Mr. Cowan was interested in those things. He didn't have any idea what they were. He took them to his friend, Judge Jack Mead in Miami, who was a collector, and he got ahold of Dr. Sellards. That's how I got involved with it.

In '37 is when we actually excavated this site. We started on the Miami site in '37. I think I had at the most nine men. They had not had any kind of experience. We had to feel our way, I didn't know the use of plaster of paris and such things. A lot of people started on these big bones. There was a real delicacy involved. We just had to be careful not to hit them with a pick or something. The main problems was to not overlook any points that might be there. That was the problem.

I happened to be the first one that found the first complete point out there. Scratching

away with a little hooked tool about the diameter of an ice pick. And I was moving it around the bone at the time, and I could hear that "screech" as it encountered the flint. That was the most exciting!!...I think we were there about seven weeks.

Once or twice, the work was interrupted by these big dust storms. One day in particular, if I can reminisce just a second on that...About 1:30 in the afternoon we could see this great, black whirl approaching us. As it got higher and higher, meaning closer and closer, we saw that we were going to have to get out, and we drove back into town, and I got in my room about the time that the storm got there. It was moving very slowly, I estimate about ten miles per hour and about a mile high. And I had a single light in my room, and by the time the dust got really bad, of course, it gets into everything. It gets into your nose and in your mouth. You can't avoid it. I could only see a glow of the lightbulb in the dust, sitting in that room. I had already gotten pans of water and had towels to put on my face. It was just unbelievable. Judge Meads' house was directly across the narrow street. A two-story white house across from my window. I could not see the outlines of that house.



Clovis Points associated with Mammoth Bones at the Miami Site. TARL Photograph 41-RB-12.

Those are the storms that make the loess. That dust and loess layer in the excavation out there was virtually the same grain size, not necessarily the same mineral, but this fine, fine, fine dust. The first bad dust storm I saw was back in '33, and the last one I saw was in '39. The five years from '33 and '34 were bad up there. I was up there at Cowan Ranch in '37, there and elsewhere. We went over and did some work at the Clovis site, and we wanted to see if there was some kind of a correlation between the sites. Miami was little, open, and isolated, and the Clovis site was huge. I tried very hard to find a record in playas up there on the High Plains of those 1930s storms. And I absolutely could not find them. Now, if you did careful screen analysis millimeters at a time, I think maybe you might pick it up. But I couldn't find it. I could find traces of ancient storms very easily.

According to my interpretation, this was a long way in front of the glacial ice where a lot of the loess originated. This was dust off the ground. We don't know from which direction it came, west or northwest. What it means to me is that there was a local and very intense drought up-wind from this area. There is another loess deposit 100 or so miles away on the plains, ten miles north of Crosbyton. Actually a similar geological place, it also is just beneath a stratum that has elephant bones in it. And it is Late Pleistocene. So I wouldn't be surprised but what both of these loess strata are from the same set of storms. But what I think is interesting about it is that this is an indication that a drought/pluvial alternation has already started before we are willing to end the Pleistocene in the plains. We know that this took place in the earlier interglacial.

We used WPA labor at the Miami site and I think the government was up to \$2.20 a day, or something like that. Pretty good pay. We dug there in the fall. I don't think we left a square yard of that deposit. All of the zone that had the elephants and points was excavated. The deeper stuff we just simply dug one north/south trench about three or four feet wide all the way across, down to the bedrock, the bedrock there being a harder, older Tertiary clay. And then we dug an east/west cross trench. I was looking for stratigraphy, but there was virtually none. There was not another thing that you could identify as a bone layer, only the one."

### Blackwater Draw

"And then there was the matter of those wells, water wells, at Blackwater Draw. The water wells down there originated with Earl Green's work [Green 1962]. Those wells were there for good reason. It was during a major drought in what they like to call the Altithermal. It was quite a way back, and there are Archaic points in the bed that overlies the tops of those wells. They are very interesting wells. I published an article on these some years ago [Evans 1951]. Earl Green published another article [Green 1962]. He found wells quite a way to the west of where we had the exposures that I reported on. He found the remnants of three wells where the gravel operations had bulldozed off overburden and they cut off all of the upper part of the wells, but there they lay exposed on the ground and he went and excavated the lower part and made a very interesting discovery. Very different from what I had seen. One of the three wells had sandy-graveled walls plastered with mud, to keep it from caving in presumably. Or as he said, maybe in cleaning out from the previous time they used particles which settled at the bottom and plastered it against the sand to keep from carrying it out. It looks rather believable.

All of the wells were Archaic. All 13 I saw were. Earl doesn't know where his began, because the tops were gone. I examined 13, where I could see the originating point, and in all of them the top was above the diatomite containing Folsom points and the tops overlay the diatomaceous muck material that had the Scottsbluff points. This was a wind-eroded surface. A beautiful wind eroded surface with little broken pieces of bone that had been rolled along, and little bits of polished gravel right on that surface, and all of the wells started from that surface, and all of them were overlaid by this jointed brown sandy material that looked like it had been occasionally a pond floor because it's quite organic, and then over that, later sands. The material that overlays the top of the wells has Archaic artifacts in it. I would say that the wells' life represents somewhere between four to six thousand years ago. That fits pretty well—but Earl wouldn't agree.

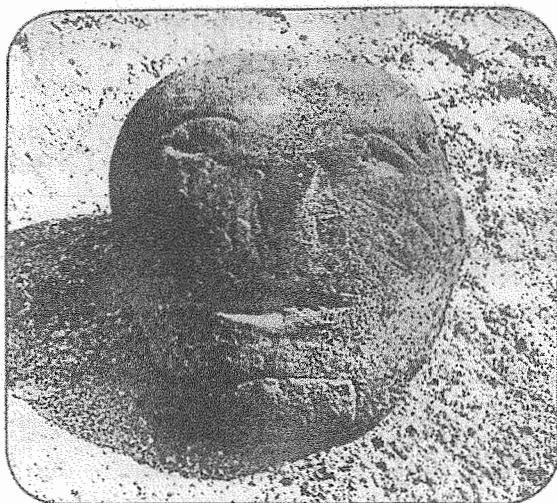
I was there when Earl found the Clovis blades [Green 1963]. I didn't have any part in the discovery, but he had just found it. I guess I was the first one to know about it. He was so

excited! He showed them to me all together there at the site. As far as I know, that is a unique discovery. A cache in the Clovis age deposit. These caches of unaltered blades are most instructive."

### Malakoff Heads

An article in the *Abilene Reporter News* dated February 11, 1940 says in part:

This [photo] is one of three stone faces, the first, uncovered in a gravel pit near Malakoff in Henderson County and now classified as "probably the earliest attempts of prehistoric man to reproduce his likeness ever found on this continent." This specimen was found in 1929, but E. H. Sellards, University of Texas geologist, undertook further search and in December, 1939, uncovered a third carving which led him to fix the age of the objects at "considerable more than 25,000 years ago." The second image was found in the gravel pit in 1935.



'OLD MAN MALAKOFF,' first of the three stone faces discovered, measures about 18 inches by 12 and weighs 98 pounds. Note the slant eyes, the grooved teeth and the line cut into the sandstone for a chin. Workmen operating a gravel pit near Malakoff in East Texas, found the image.

Evans says:

"I did a lot of general paleontological investigating with Dr. Sellards. Farmers would write in if they had some fossils or curious deposits, or if they had problems with something in their water well, or when they saw some big bones in a gully in the pasture or things like that. They'd come in and they wanted to know something. Working for a state agency, I'd get a whole bunch of these in different places and I would plan a trip where I could stop by and make a more or less circle and go and look at them, once in a while we would get some interesting things. You check out many before you find one that is really significant but at the same time you are seeing things and learning, and to some extent, you can help people satisfy their curiosity.

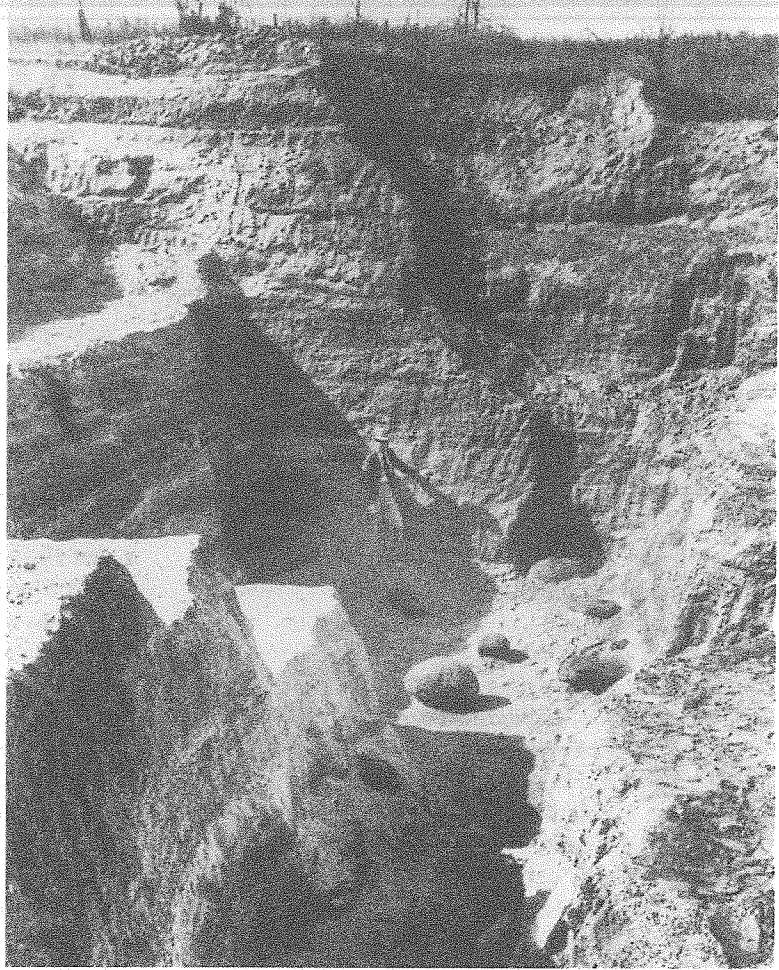
Then from there I went over to East Texas, to the Malakoff site [Sellards 1941]. We worked there a long time. One of the last heads found was not found by me; it was found after I left there to go south to Bee County on the coast. George Shaffer took over at the Malakoff site, and he did find the last one. He found it in place and he did exactly as he was instructed. As soon as he saw any kind of workings on it that looked like it was not the work of nature, he just left this cross bedded sand and gravel bank standing over it and then called me and a bunch of us went over there and we excavated the thing. I think that was, perhaps in '40 or '41.

The first head that was found was not in the same pit as the last one, but it was in the same terrace, near it. But these were two big gravel pits in the third terrace of the Trinity River. The first one was found as I said, at the base of the terrace. Some local man, working there, saw the stone when they were digging the gravel, and reported it to the mining engineer named D. C. Doctecal, who is now retired and lives here in Austin. He was in charge of the coal mining and providing coal for the Texas Power and Light from Trinidad. He was an intelligent man and when he saw this rock he saw that there had to be human workmanship and knew it was old, so he called Dr. Sellards. What they had was the word of people who saw it come out, and nobody was satisfied with that because, as Dr. Sellards said years later, this is an older geological deposit that any known to produce human evidence in this country.

It is too bad that they didn't have just an unassailable crew to work there. But later on when I got over there and started working, one of the men who was an employee there said 'Hell, we've got another one of them things.' I said 'Where is it man?' This land belonged to a Judge Bishop and I made arrangement with him to see it. I went to talk to several people that I knew, and they all told the same story. This head was different but quite similar to the first one, and so then I went to excavating. I just excavated at random and found lots of fossils. We got a good inventory of materials and actually did more than that. We ran a line of holes across this big black terrace surface, that separates Cedar Creek on the east from Trinity River on the west.

Then we dug to bedrock to pick up this surface where the heads and gravel occurred. It was a flat surface. And the only character was due to hard and soft spots in the bedrock. That bedrock was a sandstone with inclusionary masses in it. It is not a clay sandstone, but has big inclusions. And that was what these images were carved from and standing out there. They were carved in relief and standing on the old surface out there. We used hydraulics for washing with buckets of water from a pit. And you could see these things standing there.

The last image that was found was in place, which all of us witnessed, Dr. Sellards and myself. We had E. Payne and a professional photographer who had a studio here in Austin. We had George Shaffer and several others. About everyone who wanted to go or thought he knew something, including some who were skeptical. But this head was just in the position they had set it in. Its base was on bedrock, except for a few gravels, which were plastered to it by calcium carbonate, just as was the case with the first one we found. Even in these grooves, which were made to represent eyes, gravel was cemented in those. And somebody, they shouldn't have...dug those out so you could see them



Glen Evans at the Malakoff Site. Photograph courtesy of the Texas Memorial Museum

better. I think the third one being in the precise position both in respect to bedrock and the overlying gravel, as was the reported situation on the others, I think the question of their validity didn't exist.

Dr. Sellards had a fine idea, and an ambitious one, and he called on some people he knew (can't recall names now), and there was talk about spending a lot of money and he told them what this money might prove. And then we went to Judge Bishop and made a tentative agreement with him. He was going to get in there with a drag line, and move the upper thirty or forty feet of terrace from a quite large area and then when we got to the gravel, we were going to mine the gravel and stockpile it on flat areas where he could sell it. Until we got down to the bottom two or three feet and at that point hand excavation would begin. We would have somebody there to monitor as it



went on. But we never found anything, obviously. We never found a bone or a tool that was in any way suggestive of man, only the heads and nothing else.

I think this is Wisconsin age, but which interstadial? Not the late one. It is, I think, very possibly in the earlier part of the Wisconsin between thirty to fifty thousand years ago. On the basis of how much has been done, now, we know that there are higher terraces, or remnants, but this is the highest of the well developed and well preserved terraces in that part of the river section. It has a magnificent form; it's got round slopes, and it's got the giant bison only, not any of the little bison. The fauna absolutely supports the geological evidence; and I studied the third terrace on the Trinity for a period of many years. And the terrace below it has articulated Mammoth in it. We don't have the sequence quite like you have at Clovis.

When you get up to the uneroded terrace surface, it is approximately fifty feet above the level of its base—where the images were. Where the gravel pits are dug is on the eroded slope of the terrace, and there may be as much as twenty-five feet. I think there is 17 or 18 feet of gravel above this. Absolutely no possibility of intrusion; not at all.

People would believe it now if you found it. I've heard authorities here in town at the University of Texas, explain to me why it was impossible, without ever going to look at it. And the principal argument was that if man had been here, he wouldn't have had the leisure to develop any artistic tendencies. And what we were talking about was elementary artistic talent."

### Plainview Site

"After World War II, I did a dig at Plainview [Sellards et al. 1947]. We found it on a Sunday when Grayson Meade and me were walking out every exposure we could find in an old caliche pit on the edge of Plainview. In the north side of the pit they had actually cut out part of the stream terrace, and they cut through and removed part of this bison layer that had the Plainview points in it. I was walking around one way and Meade the other. I found the bones, and got down and started looking and right away picked up a couple of little spalls of flint. And, oh boy, that was the start, that was a good

site. My guess is about one-third of the bone bed was removed by the caliche operation, just by the way the rest of the valley wall looked along there.

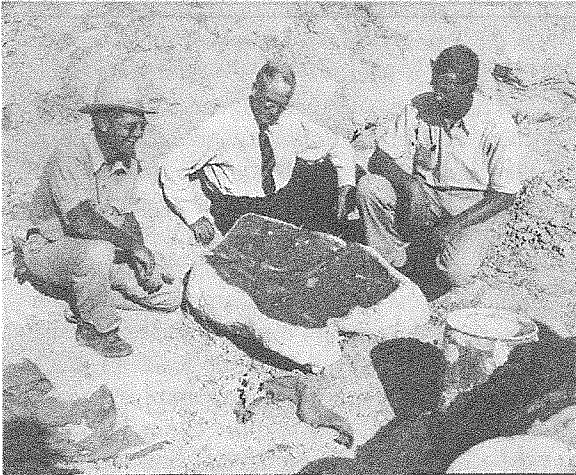
The first Sunday that we were there, Dr. Sellards came out. He loved these sites. Dr. Sellards knew an awful lot of geology. He wasn't the most skillful excavator. I always kind of worried, when he got there, what he would tear up and he knew it. He didn't like to have local criticism, he didn't think it was good. We were digging and it was Sunday morning and we could hear the church bells, and directly he stopped us and said, 'Great heavens, what would we do if someone comes out here who has a kinda hang-up about not working on Sunday?' And I said, 'We'll just have to tell him that we have found the ox in the ditch and we'll have to get him out.' [Chuckle.]

Grayson and I were both working for the museum at that time and we got various people to volunteer to help. One of them was this excellent amateur archeologist from Shreveport; do you remember him? Clarence Webb. He came out and contributed two weeks' work. Boy you didn't have to watch what he did. He knew how to do it. And then, a big local fellow, a fine man named Roy Parks, he was a collector. He was such a strong man, he would take a gravel scoop and remove overburden. You know we just had trouble handling these shovels, and he would take that gravel scoop and overburden would zing-out. He was a great help. We got help from Louis Bridwell, and I guess that was about all.

Before we had gone no more than three feet on the excavated slope, we had already found a point, so we knew they were there. We knew we had an association. We knew we had a new kind of artifact. So, then we went on back, I think, about ten or eleven feet maximum, it wasn't too bad. Fortunately, it was a narrow channel accumulation, and somewhat parallel to the caliche excavation. Not quite but somewhat.

I think the estimate was that there were about one hundred animals. But you have to guess about how many were hauled away. I know there was some young stock. We didn't save all the bones from the site...there were quite a lot of them. What we did was save what we thought was identifiable, we looked at them to see if we could see tool markings. But that was all. Actually what we were looking for was the possible evidence of bone tools, some kind of utility





Jacketed Bison Bones at the Plainview Site. Left to Right: Grayson Meade, E. H. Sellards, and Richard Bronaugh. Photograph from a 1945 issue of the *Plainview Herald*.

tools, but I never did see any. Isolated teeth we saved, but fragments with no diagnostic value, we just left them there. It would have been better if we would have kept them all, like we do now, but you have to remember when we were excavating, we always had exceedingly limited money. We sometimes had a few volunteers, which were a lot of help. I raised money privately on some of these projects from some people I knew. I'd go to them to see if I could get some help. We didn't have these big grants in aid. I envy people who have them.

These bones were in accumulated sediments that I don't hesitate to say accumulated in a pond on the floor, a channel pond. There was stream debris in depressions in the caliche. There were fresh water snails in there, and little bitty bivalves; there were various evidences of fresh water, and there was a pond there when the bison got in there. I never could determine, to save my life, whether they had gotten in there all at once, or whether it was a gradual accumulation.

I still don't believe that you have to, when you find a kill like that, that you have to assume that it took place at one dramatic moment. Unless it is something like one of your bison drops, you know, where you may have a single incident like that.

I don't recall how long we worked at Plainview, but I would think five weeks or so. Something on that order. You see, for a little while Grayson and I worked alone, and we had Richard Bronaugh helping us, and then from time to time there were others. Also, we took some time to explore the gravel pit that was cutting into the terrace, just adjacent to where we were, and we took an elephant jaw out of there one day. It took a long time to do that, and we studied the geology of the thing pretty much. So, we didn't spend all that time just literally taking out bison bones.

One of the disconcerting things we had to deal with there was the use of that pit. A lot of people practicing with guns, they used it as a shooting range. And they had high power rifles, and the bullets would zoom in, and they would come out with pistols. This was disconcerting.

The city owned the site then. We had no trouble at all getting permission. And wonderful cooperation of the people, they just did everything they could. Every time Dr. Sellards came out, he gave them something that they could use in the newspapers. And that would bring a big influx of visitors. That's true of most any site."

### Fort Saint Louis

A news article in the *Waco News Tribune*, June 21, 1940, says:



Geological Society of America visiting Evan's Plainview Site Excavations.

Several pieces of pottery shards found by Dave Cheavans, Associated Press staffman and former Baylor University student, from Dallas, at the site of Fort St. Louis on Garcitas Creek near Victoria have been added to the John K. Strecker Museum at Baylor, Dr. Leo Murray, curator said today. According to popular belief, the site is the location of the Sieur de la Salle's fort established in 1685, Dr. Murray commented. Some of the pottery is believed to be of French origin and some of Spanish origin. Cheavans is sending some of the shards to the University of Texas for further identification.

On March 23, 1949, Dr. E.H. Sellards wrote to Dr. Herbert Eugene Bolton at Berkeley:

The Texas Memorial Museum has for some time been considering making explorations at and in the vicinity of the La Salle settlement on Garcitas Creek, Texas. Mr. Glen Evans, Assistant Director of the Museum, has made several preliminary trips, and it is our hope to be in readiness to excavate in that region during the coming summer. However, we do not wish to begin excavating in the locality which you have so well described in case you expect to make further explorations at that locality. If, however, you do not expect to revisit the locality or do additional work there, we would like to carry out excavations during the spring and summer months, providing all the necessary arrangements can be made. We feel that we are in position to make a very careful and painstaking search for whatever relics may exist at the La Salle campsite. We would expect to excavate to such depth as relics may be found and we would hope to locate the foundations of some of the buildings constructed by La Salle. As I have indicated, we do not wish to begin excavations at the La Salle campsite until we hear from you.

On October 2, 1996, I had the privilege and pleasure of doing an additional interview with Glen Evans, specifically discussing his work at Fort Saint Louis on Garcitas Creek. The following are his recollections:

"This was 1950 when we did the work. I was at the time associate director of the museum. Dr. Sellards who was the director at the time had talked with Herbert Eugene Bolton earlier about the site, and Bolton had given the name of the Keerans. John and Betty were both friendly enough but they just were adamant they weren't going to let me in. Mrs. Keeran, the mother of John, was living up at the main house up the hill. They called it the California Ranch. She saw some little thing I'd written and I guess she thought it was all right and she decided I was a writer. Anyway, Mrs. Keeran and I got to be real friends and so I told her about John and she said, 'Oh well he'd been bothered that people would go in. They'd lost a calf or two and people shot deer when they weren't supposed to, and all that.' She took me down to talk to John and Betty and finally, he said 'All right you can go in and do what you want to do. Take your crew, set up your camp like you're talking about and I'll help you whenever I can but on this condition. You don't tell anybody else and don't bring anybody in after you!' I asked him if he had ever found anything there. He said he had found little copper pieces, little odds and ends. They were interesting, but not definitive so I went ahead and made the plan.

I took a crew down from here, a museum crew. We set up a back country camp. It was remote. Quite lovely place, the coyotes would sing to us at night and we had great stories around the fire. It was 1950. It started in the summer and finally broke shortly before Christmas.

We had one terrible time with mosquitoes, one evening in particular. It's not even pleasant to recall it. You know the marsh across to the east of it there. Somebody said, 'It looks like a cloud coming.' And there is this huge gray mass and we got to looking and got quiet and we could here this humming, humming and it kept coming in our direction and it was mosquitoes by the billions! When the mosquitoes hit, one of the guys said, 'Fellows, you know what we forgot? We forgot the goddammed mosquito nets!' and we had indeed forgotten them but we went on and survived the night and it was a tough one. The next morning, I knew I had a CREW! I got in the car and went and got five gallons of DDT and a big pump and we really worked on them, cleaning them out of the brush there. Made life tolerable.

I started out by climbing some of those noble old oaks there. I could see where the brush was growing so well. That brush identified the cemetery for me. We cut out an awful lot of brush then we dug trenches. That's all we could do is dig these exploratory trenches. We found old parts of guns and the usual lead balls and odds and ends that come, china, majolica and other. And we saw both French... We got more Spanish stuff than we did French in most of the trenches. Then we ran into a place where there was a lot of slag. There had been a little furnace. We found the foundation of a house and that foundation had the old posts burned off. There was this floor made with broken up sea shell and above it was the asphalt that you find in the dunes down there. They had a lot of that pounded into it. It wasn't in all parts of it but you kept finding this asphalt down in there. They'd gather that to cement it together.

Generally about two and a half feet was as deep as the trenches would go. You'd go through the soil to definite [clay] bedrock. Every once in a while you'd find a hole, as though somebody had dug a pit and there's always lots of junk [trash] in it. We saved just about everything we found. My job was, to go with it until you can say beyond question that this is where the fort was. We got the foundation. We saw that, and the posts and all that. I wasn't supposed to clean up the whole site. My job was to say, 'This is the site' and I did it. There is no question about the site. We know that's it! If we had only had metal detectors, we would of gotten the cannons [see Tunnell 1998].

That foundation, I put it back. I didn't dig it out or anything, just worked around the posts. I don't know if those posts were cut there or were pieces off of the timber from the ship. One of the things we found was a large silver coin and it looked as if it had been slivered. It was a big coin. I didn't get a chance to work with it, except to get it placed in the museum and recorded. When I went back later, six or eight years ago to see the coin, they said every single coin had been carried off. It was French. I remember from the words on it. It was French as I recall and we had one or two others that we were sure were French, and most of the little ones were copper and Spanish. Among the things I think there were three complete glass arrowheads. They were all little ones. They were true arrowheads. They were made of good glass. I know we had a belt buckle.

I think I had seven men and then Louis Bridwell came down. Louis was an elderly fellow and a wonderful man. He made his living collecting rare moths and shipping them all over the world for collectors. He showed me how to bait a tree and we would go out at night and see those swarms of moths that you never, ever see. Adolph Witte who is my senior by about ten years was a great friend. There was a young man named Bennett Poiner and Hal Story. Later he came down on a few weekends and we found, right close to the camp was the roost of the Black Crown Night Herons. There were I guess 50 or 60 Night Herons all in one tree. On one occasion in the evening we had a flock of about 30. Ol' Hard Heads, this is the American Stork. They were right there 40 yards away. They spent the night there. The next morning they took off.

Rattlesnakes? I think we got two or three. I don't like them but I've had them in lots of camps. We had armadillos and we had alligators. Ben Poiner went out and found baby alligators. Adolf Witte told us there one evening that the Karankawa Indians down here used a lot of alligator grease that they would roll in ashes and put on themselves as a protection against the mosquitoes. And everybody oohed and aahed and ooped about it, you know. Terrible alligator grease, I'd rather be bitten by a rattlesnake than have alligator grease. But the night the mosquitoes attacked us, we were desperate and then somebody said, 'Alligator grease! Where in the hell is the alligator grease?' That was the last humor that night.

Where we had our camp was a concrete watering tank at that time they would just let the artesian well run. A little overflow place that went down to the creek, a little stream, had green grasses and succulent plants growing along, pretty little streamlet going there. The deer would come in the evening and nibble all on that. I saw a raccoon sitting there in it and fishing for crawfish you know. It was just quite wonderful.

The Keerans saw a lot of Bolton. He went there and he looked around. Walked up and down. He thought it was the place. John had shown him little trinkets like he did me. We gave John a few odd little pieces when we had duplicates because he had been so nice. In the ranch house they had a wolf skin rug—32 skins of the red wolves. A good part of them came out of the ranch there. While we were there, we'd

go down sometimes on Sundays and catch a few fish down there in a stream right on the edge of the bay. One night when we were sitting around the fire the coyotes had been real close and suddenly broke out barking and just gave us a whale of a startle. After that there was a lot of story telling going on. We had three tents. but most of us slept outside. Whenever the weather got bad we'd move in and sleep inside. We cooked our own meals. We made coffee. We didn't have a radio. We didn't have a newspaper, didn't have anything.

Right near the end of the camp, it was obvious that a weather change was developing. You could feel it in the air and all. John came over in his car, said we are going to take you up to the house tonight, that blizzard is coming in. He took us to the house and gave me a private room. The next morning when I woke up there was John with the tray and the coffee so I could have breakfast. I don't know that I had ever been treated like that before.

Mrs. Keeran had 73 cats, house cats. And she fed them in a little trough made with boards and she would feed them and she would call them by name and talk to them. They all looked exactly alike. She was kind of fun, she wanted a Cadillac, so John bought her a Cadillac and she wanted the kind that had those fenders sticking out. One day I saw the Cadillac sitting out there and I knew she was in trouble so I stopped the car. She was around there pulling an ax from the back of the Cadillac, walked around over there and there was one of those big Encino bushes, with branches out where it could scrape the Cadillac if she passed it too close. There she was whacking with that ax. There sat that big shiny car with the engine just murmuring.

John came down one chilly Sunday to a nice reef down there where all this fresh water was coming in. It's an oyster reef in the bay, clean, a good one and they came back with lots of oysters and I love oysters, and he knew it. Oh, they were prime and he gave me a great big bunch of them. This crew was revolted at the idea of eating—"You don't eat those things do ya?" I said, "Oh yeah, I eat 'em." I got a lot of that Spanish moss and soaked them in water in the artesian well and put it in a wet tow sack and then got all these oysters and laid 'em in there and covered it with coals. It must of been about 60 or 70 beautiful oysters in there baking and they wouldn't eat them, so Louis

Bridwell and I stayed there and feasted. It was great. Never had so many good oysters in my life.

We did not dig in the French cemetery except I did dig one place and I could find where the ground had been refilled, and I was just pretty sure that was about where it was supposed to be. Christian burials. They'd dig Indian graves. Heck, they didn't care, but not Christian burials. I didn't get a picture of Fort St. Louis. Not a single one."

### F. EARL GREEN

I originally met Dr. Green back in the early 1970s when he worked for the Texas Parks and Wildlife Department in Austin, in their Historic Sites Program. Then in the early 1980s I visited him at his home in Lubbock, to examine the original Clovis blades from Blackwater Draw (see Green 1963). He was most gracious, fed me good home cooked meals, told me some great stories, and loaned me the collection for a couple of years. When I returned the collection to him, I took along my tape recorder and did the following interview with him at his home in Lubbock, on November 19, 1986.

Dr. Green says:

"I was born in Slaton, a few miles down the road, in 1925. We lived there until 1933 when my dad leased Buffalo Springs in Yellowhouse Canyon, a few miles from Lubbock. We lived there for four years when the depression was getting pretty bad. In the canyon we used to hunt arrowheads like all kids, and that was a good locality because Buffalo Springs were the largest in the country. There were campsites all around. People came out, especially in summer, to swim and fish, and in winter we'd get a few duck hunters. But there would be weeks that would go by that we wouldn't see anybody from the outside. Of course the area now is more or less developed, and the sites are covered by a big lake.

After being wounded in the Philippines in World War II and spending six months in a hospital at Fort Bliss, I decided I needed some education, so I started at Texas Tech. I got my Bachelors degree in '50, my Masters in '51 and my Ph.D. in '54. I minored in anthropology and majored in geology."

### Lubbock Lake Site

“Through Grayson Meade I became interested in vertebrate paleontology. I was there in the Science building one day when he rushed up, all in a dither, and was gathering up some camping equipment. He said ‘Earl if you want to see something, come on out to the Lubbock Lake site...we found a point.’ I went out there and he had found the first Folsom point in that bone bed at the top of the diatomite. Of course that was exciting. This work was being done under Sellards by Grayson and Glen Evans. This was probably about ’52, or something like that.

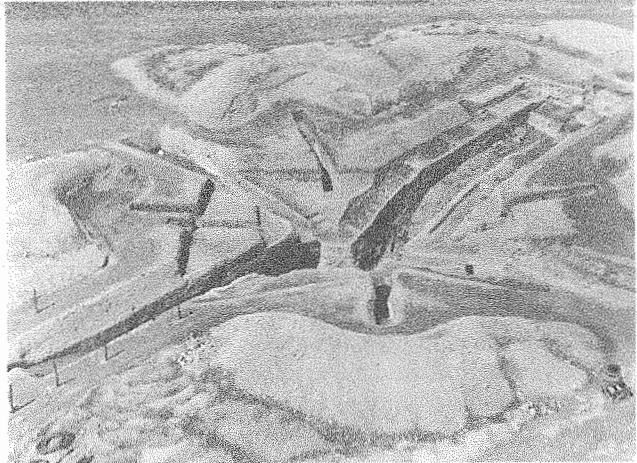
After spending a year at the American Museum of Natural History, and several years in the oil business, I got a letter from Fred Wendorf saying he wanted to do this paleoecological project on the Plains and wondered if I’d be interested in working on it [see Wendorf 1961; Wendorf and Hester 1975]. I was bored with the oil business and came back to work with Fred.”

### Odessa Meteor Crater

“We came back to Lubbock in the fall of ’57 and I started doing geological fieldwork on the Monahans project. Then we moved to Odessa and I did a lot of fieldwork out there in the Monahans sand dune areas [Green 1961]. We also cored the Odessa Meteor Crater. The original exploration of that meteor crater was done by Dr. Sellards with WPA monies. And he had dug a big shaft in the center of it, and had it timbered and had a draw works and elevator and everything in there. Of course over the years the draw works had disappeared and all the timbers had been burned out and the county had poured a cement slab across the top of this deep shaft.

Fred Wendorf had talked to Glen Evans, and Glen said this would be a good place to get a continuous section for fossil pollen. This had been an old meteor crater, and nothing washed into it, and the only thing in there is stuff that was falling from the atmosphere. So we took a pretty good core from there which failed to produce any suitable pollen specimens.

There was an oilfield contractor there in Monahans who had built this spudding rig that we used for coring and he helped us with



Odessa Meteor Crater Excavations, 1940. Texas Memorial Museum Photograph 291-1d-34.



Odessa Meteor Crater Excavations, 1940. Texas Memorial Museum Photograph 291-1d-33.

this fieldwork, you know. Well, he built a steel cage so he could lower me down into the old shaft. We went over there one day and he had an old army ammunition carrier, 4-wheel drive Dodge, a big truck-like machine that had a winch on it and an A-frame on the front. And we took that over there and chiseled a hole in this concrete slab that had been poured over Sellard’s shaft. I got in this steel cage and he got up there to work the winch, you know, he lowered me down below the top of the concrete cap. I got down in there and my eyes got adjusted to the darkness and I looked around and could see this concrete collar had been poured around the top of this shaft which was about maybe 8 x 14 feet, a great big hole in the ground. The caliche material under that collar



had caved off and that thing looked like it was just hanging there. [Chuckle.]

The purpose of this was to collect samples from the walls of the shaft, and ideally I'd take samples and Ed would lower me a little and I'd take some more and go all the way to the bottom. But I tried to take a sample and every time I'd swing my pick, this cage would swing back away from the wall. And so Ed gave me a piece of pipe he had on the truck and I braced the cage and I'd hold that pipe against the opposite wall so I could hold the cage up close to that wall. I reached out and hit that wall a good blow, and there must have been about two tons of that caliche just sloughed off. There was kind of a roar and it hit the bottom and dust just boiled up till it was darker than pitch inside there. [Chuckle.] And all this dust just boiled up and I stood there a minute and old Ed said, 'Earl this thing's got a coming-out gear on it' and I said 'Well, let's use it.' [Chuckle.] So he pulled me up and backed that thing away.

There was a crew pouring a slab a few yards away from where we were, and Ed walked over there and said could we borrow a little of your cement and the boy said sure. So he backed his truck over there and poured out a big old gob of cement and we covered that hole in the slab back over. And old Ed found a little stick and drew a chicken on it. [Chuckle] Boy I'm telling you that was something. I just hit that wall, you know, I hit it a good blow; I was going to get a good sample, and just a big old mass of that thing just...boom! I don't know, I think that shaft was supposed to have been about 120 feet deep. Just a deep dark hole."

### Back to Lubbock Lake

"While I was at the museum, I dug two or three different places. Really nothing outstanding. I guess 1959 was when I started digging out at Lubbock Lake. I got an NSF grant in '60 to try to pull some of this stuff together. Then I started a systematic excavation down through all of the layers, and I picked a spot where I figured I could go from top to bottom without very much discontinuity. I was able to get contiguous exposures from top to bottom, which amounted to about 22 vertical feet. I dug at least an area of 5 x 10 feet myself, all the way through it with my own hands. I had a pretty good idea of the stratigraphy. We found a few artifacts,

nothing really significant, not too exciting. Probably a reworked section of an Agate Basin point...may have gotten one or two flakes, or three flakes that were Folsom...nothing really exciting. In one area I found a deposit of reworked Blancan bones—an earlier geological age, which dated the underlying material. Most of the fieldwork I did there in the summertime."

### Clovis Blades

"Of course, I worked in the museum and spent most of my time in the museum and on various field trips, short field trips looking for bones and things like that. I checked the Clovis site every once in awhile, and that's when I found these Clovis blades [Green 1963]. It was in February, which is a bleak month out here in this part of the country. Anyhow, I was over there and they had pretty well cleaned off the southwest quarter of the old pond that had encroached upon the Blackwater Draw deposits accumulating there. And I drove down on



F. E. Green with the Clovis Blades. Photograph by the author.

this cleaned off surface and got out and started looking around.

On the last run that this earth moving machine made, it had left a little overflow ridge and I just sorta' wandered up there and I saw this section of a blade. It's hard to describe, but I knew right then that here was something I had never seen or expected to see the likes of... and I started to look along there and picked up another piece, and then two or three of them. I recognized them by the shape, they still had the matrix completely surrounding them. But they

had this long, linear, curved shape. I started down that overflow ridge, and it was just like picking cotton there for a distance of about 25 feet. I found these things—I tell you, it was exciting!! Of course, I looked and looked, and it started getting dark, so I left. I got back over there the following week, which was in early March, and I found three more pieces. But the rest of that stuff had been carried off to the dump. They cleaned this stuff out and carried it up on top of the old basin, off to the southwest there in a big earth dump. Of course, I looked on that spoil area for weeks and weeks after that.

This cleared off area was about 450 feet long and it was really a shelf, sort of terrace, in this old Clovis basin, and the pond sediments, including pure diatomite, had lapped up onto this shelf. The last cut they made had left this little ridge which had pure diatomite on it, and 4, 5, or 6 inches of Clovis sand underneath it. This was preserved in that one little strip there for quite a distance. They must have hit that cache of blades on the last cut. I just happened to be there at the right time. There were no other artifacts there, it was clean as a whistle. In fact, it looked like a roadcut the highway makes, you know, when they get everything cleaned up. There were no bones. The blades evidently had been together in one little cache. Of course, I later found out some of the blades overlapped and had been struck from the same core. They were in a little package or something that somebody had either laid down and couldn't find again, or maybe buried. And the Clovis sand matrix was adhering to all the specimens.

After that work, there was talk about the State of New Mexico buying the entire gravel pit and the Governor of New Mexico had even called Sam Sanders. But he told me personally, the Governor asked me to come up there and I told him it's just as far from here to Santa Fe as it is from Santa Fe to here. [Chuckle.] He said if you want to talk to me, come down here. But the Governor didn't ever come."

#### CLARENCE WEBB

This is an interview conducted with Dr. Clarence Webb at his home in Shreveport, Louisiana, in October 1989, done by Curtis Tunnell. Not long after our interview, Dr. Webb passed away. While working on this manuscript in 1997, I called

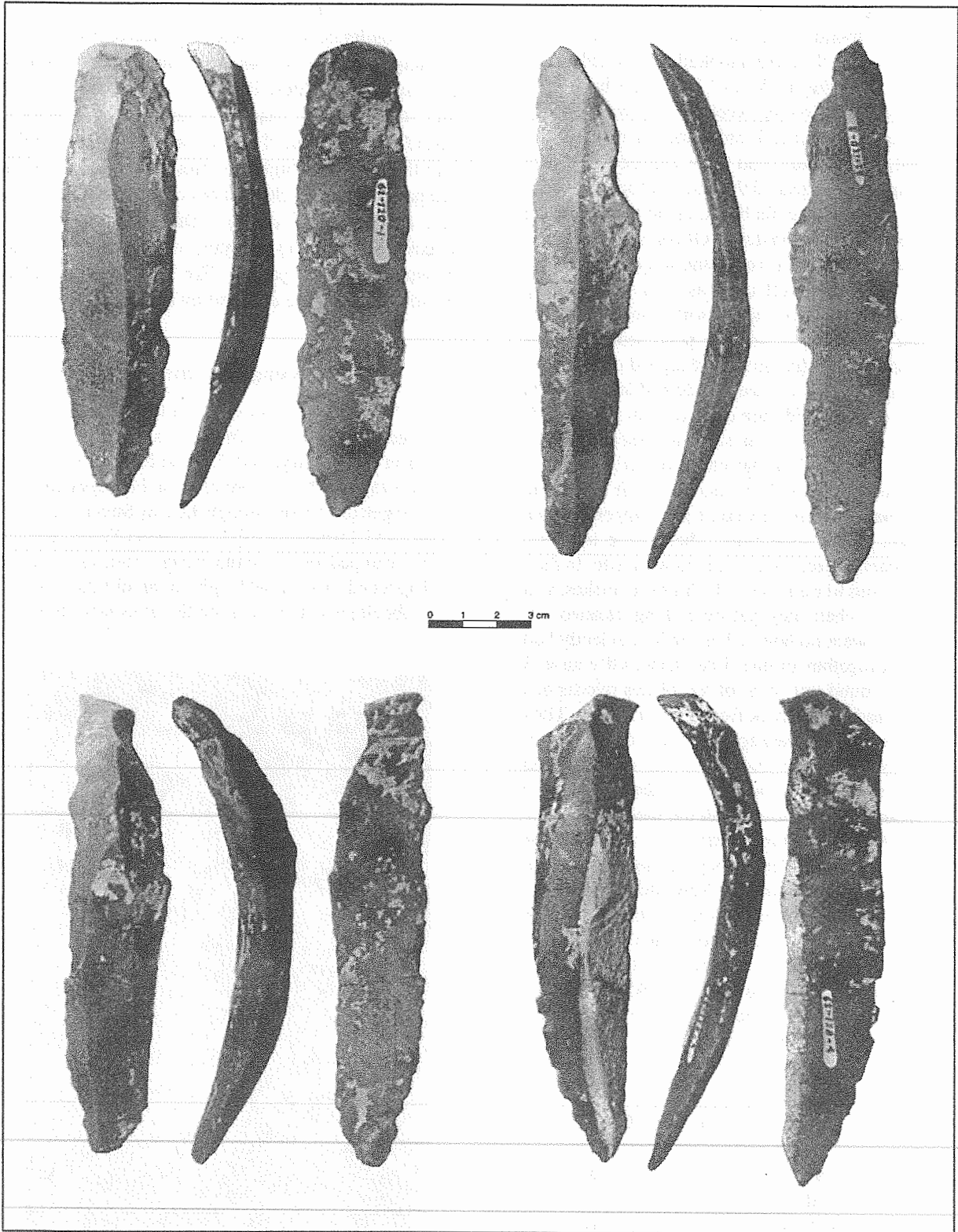
the Louisiana State Museum in Shreveport and inquired about Dr. Webb's papers. Indeed, they said two file cabinets of his notes and correspondence were there and accessible. While visiting the museum and examining Dr. Webb's correspondence files, Dr. George Shannon told me this story: A few years ago he got a call from a trash man who said: "I know you are an archeologist and thought you might be interested in a bunch of old papers which I cleaned out of Dr. Webb's house and am about to dump." Dr. Shannon almost wrecked his pickup hurrying over to retrieve the treasure trove of papers. Far too often valuable personal papers are dumped by a trash man.

#### Beginning in Archeology

"I was born in Shreveport in 1902. My family lived south of here in De Soto Parish. So I grew up in the country, and finished high school in Shreveport. My first interest in archeology came along in the 1930s through the Boy Scouts. And in 1935, I went on a trip with a Scout Troop, and we camped on Ouachita River. And, as it so happened, we camped right on an old Archaic archeological site. And the Scout master knew



Dr. Clarence Webb at home, 1989. Photograph by the author.



Four of the famous Clovis blades found by Earl Green at Blackwater Draw, New Mexico, in 1960. Photograph by F. E. Green.

about it, and was interested in it. So, we made a collection, and talked about the objects and so forth. I went out with him on one or two other trips, and became interested in it.

There was not one professional archeologist in Louisiana at that time. But, shortly after that, Jim Ford came to Louisiana State University [LSU], and I met him, and we became friends. But I had to learn in the beginning pretty well from reading, and doing it on my own.

Not long after that time, the first WPA project was set up in Louisiana, and Jim Ford [see O'Brien and Lyman 1998, 1999] was in charge of that. He had a group that included Gordon Willey, Stu Neitzel, and several other people. They did excavations at Marksville. And then they did the original Tchefuncte excavations, pretty well established the lower Mississippi sequence, which started with Tchefuncte at that time."

### Gahagan Mound

"I got a copy of Clarence Moore's [1912] description of sites on the Red River. I read in it about the site at Gahagan and the site at Mounds Plantation, which is about ten miles north of here. Gahagan is about 40 miles south of Shreveport on the Red River.

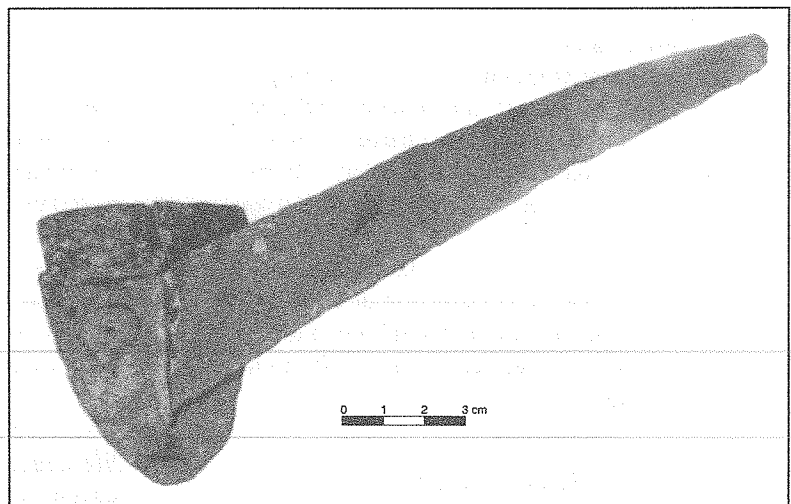
My brother-in-law, who went with me a lot on archeological trips and site surveys, had, by accident, found a site at Smithport Landing, which was back in the hills from Gahagan in De Soto Parish. The hogs had rooted up a small pot which was intact. So, we got a couple of trowels and worked on it. And we found a little pottery there. It was early Caddoan pottery [see Webb 1963].

And then we stopped by the Gahagan site, just to make a pottery collection, and look at the site. And, by accident, I found a half dozen sherds that appeared to come from the same vessel. So, I did a little scraping and clearing off the surface, and I found a line of a burial pit. So, that was the way we discovered the burials in the Gahagan mound. That was the summer of 1936. So, I talked with Jim

Ford about methods to use, and we went ahead and excavated it, because the river was moving in on it [see Webb and Dodd 1939]. Indeed, four or five years later the river completely wiped out the site...the Gahagan site is gone! And if we hadn't excavated those two burial pits, we wouldn't have known anything about Gahagan, except what Clarence Moore had written. He found one burial centered in the mound, one of the deep pit burials, and worked it out. And he said he tested around the mound, and didn't find evidence of another. We found he had missed the two pits that we later worked out by one or two feet. He was just one foot from the pair of long-nosed god masks and the copper hand effigy, and those were the sort of things that he would have had a conniption fit to have found. [Chuckle.] But I'm glad we found it. And it's in our museum, now, and not in Philadelphia, or somewhere else in the United States.

One of the big burial pits at Gahagan was 19 x 14 feet in size, containing seven burials altogether. There was a row of burials, and one, apparently an individual of importance at the head of the row.

The other pit, apparently, was unfinished. It was a big pit about 15 feet long and maybe 10 or 12 feet wide. And at one end they had placed three burials, and there was still space for any number up to 10 or 15, if they had wanted to place them. But there were no more in the pit. However, sitting against the opposite wall was the stone carved frog-effigy pipe, which was one of the choice finds from



Long-nosed God Mask from the Gahagan Site. Photograph by the author.

Gahagan.

We would work weekends. And we got the plantation manager interested, and he would protect the site until we could get back. So, it was a period of about three months, working at intervals when we could, and then I took one vacation to finish it up.

There were several people here in town who were interested. Michael Beckman and my two brothers-in-law worked with me, and Monroe Dodd, particularly. My wife's brother, and a couple of friends worked for a short period. I had two hired men that I got through the plantation owner and manager, to handle the dirt. We did the excavating, and they would handle the dirt, and when we finished, they would refill the pits. There was some tons of dirt in pits that size. Those big pits were about eight feet deep.

Most of the river valley had a reddish sandy loam on top that's about 2 1/2 to 3 1/2 feet deep. And then there was a base of clay, red clay layer. And the burials seldom went below the top of this red clay, but most of them went down to it.

Both burial pits were on the slope of the mound. The outer margin of the pits was not more than a foot deep. That's why those sherds that I found showed on top. They were sherds of a very thin bottle.

It was a fairly steep conical mound, not large, but it was about eight feet in height, and, I guess, 80 to 100 feet in diameter. We looked on the bottom for any evidence of antecedent burials or house structures, but we didn't find any. Most of those early mounds did not have antecedent structures. Some of the later mounds did. When they began to combine temple mounds with burial mounds, usually there would be a house structure at ground level, presumably, a ceremonial structure, temple mound. And most of the time they would be charred, burned, either intentional burning or accidental burning. And, as it burned, they would cover it over with sand.

As a result, we could get charred materials, and get some idea of construction of the buildings. And then, they would build it up in increments of two or three feet, level it off, build another temple."

### **Belcher Mound**

"The Belcher Mound, which was our third major excavation, took five years in the first

season of study, and then after the war, an additional three years [Webb 1959]. That's World War II, which interrupted nearly all the work of that kind.

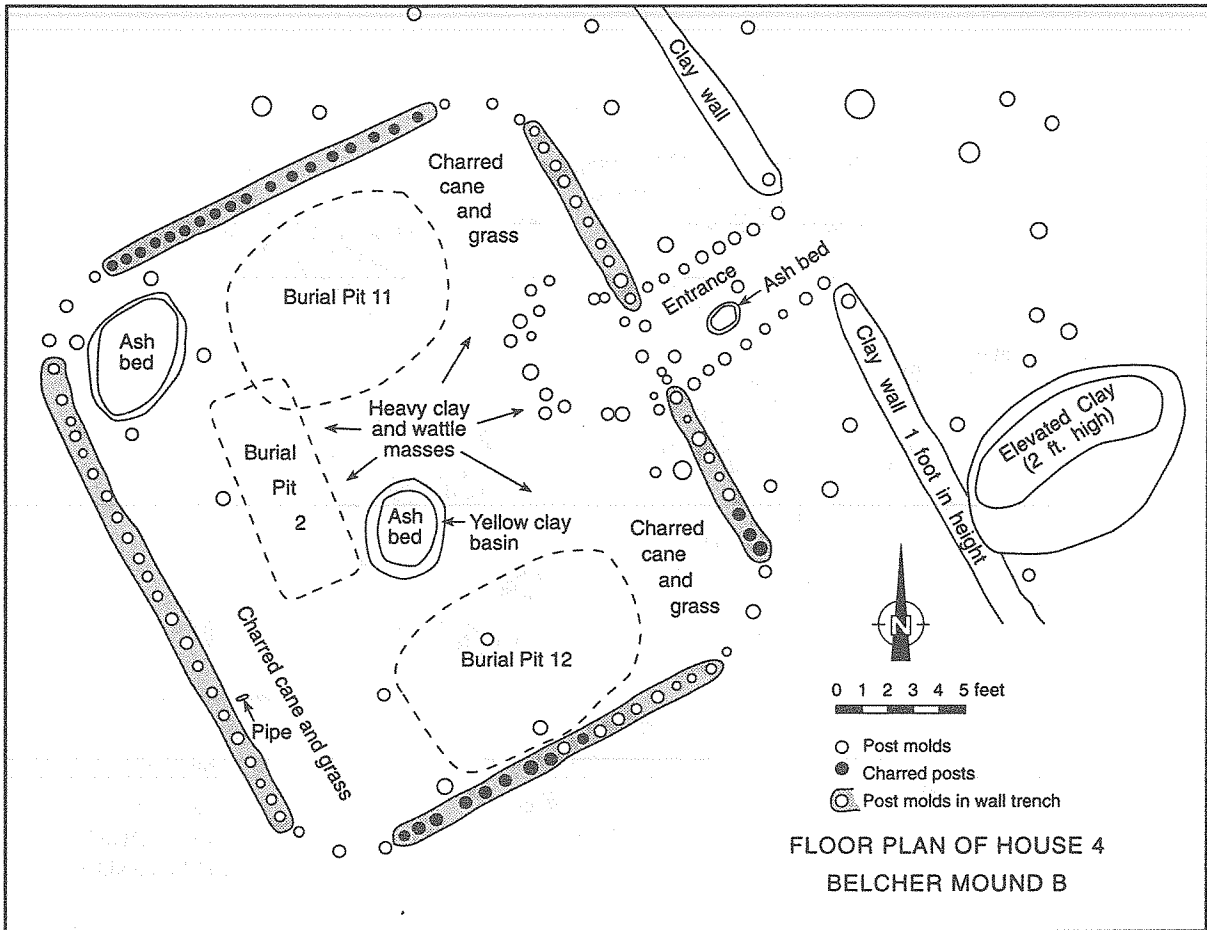
So, we worked at Belcher a total of about eight years. We found four levels from the original mound level to the terminal building, one to three house structures on each level, a total of eight house structures on the four levels.

I got a pretty good picture of the sequence of use of the combined temple and burial mounds. When they would have the burning of a temple, whether intentional or accidental, they would cover it over, often covering part of it as it burned so that there was preservation of some of the wood, and the grass thatch and materials that it was built from. And they would build it up two and a half to three feet. And then they would place a number of burials. Two on the bottom level, none on the second level, about eight or ten burials on the third, and six or eight on the top level. So that we think we got a pretty good picture of the burial materials and burial methods that went with each time period, along with the house construction method.

The earliest house was rectangular, and built like the Mississippian houses with a trench and posts inset in the trench, and a log, to stabilize the posts, set horizontally, and then a sloping and overhanging roof. The wall posts were vertical, and then the roof was built with roof support, and they had a series of four interior large posts, or, in some instances, two or three smaller posts in a cluster to support, the sloping roof. That was the first house in the sequence. All of the remainder of them were circular.

We worked at the Belcher site from about 1936 to 1941. Five years. And then, again, after the war in 1949 to 1952 or 1953. I published it in 1959. We went to great pains to explain to the landowners what we were doing, and that the materials would be in state institutions and available to the public in museums. During the time we were working at Belcher, after we'd finished Gahagan, Ford and Willey came up and visited. They stayed with us for a couple of days. And they went up to Belcher, looked at what we had done. We'd cleared the top level. The families who lived on the farm worked with us at times. We'd hire them for dirt moving and so forth. A couple of the tenants became pretty expert at it. They wouldn't touch the burials at first. But, eventually, it got so they could work out pottery





Floor Plan of House 4, Mound B, at the Belcher Site (after Webb 1940).

or burials or anything themselves. We trained ourselves, and trained our own crew at Gagahan and Belcher.

Lilly did his research at Chicago during World War II, and by the 1950s, the radiocarbon process was available. I had some materials not coated with preservatives from the Belcher excavation. So, I started getting radiocarbon determinations, I guess, in the latter 1950s.

After we finished our work at the Belcher site, the mounds were completely removed by the owner and distributed over the fields. But if anyone wanted to do subsurface work at Belcher, there are probably things that could be found.”

#### Visit to the Plainview Site

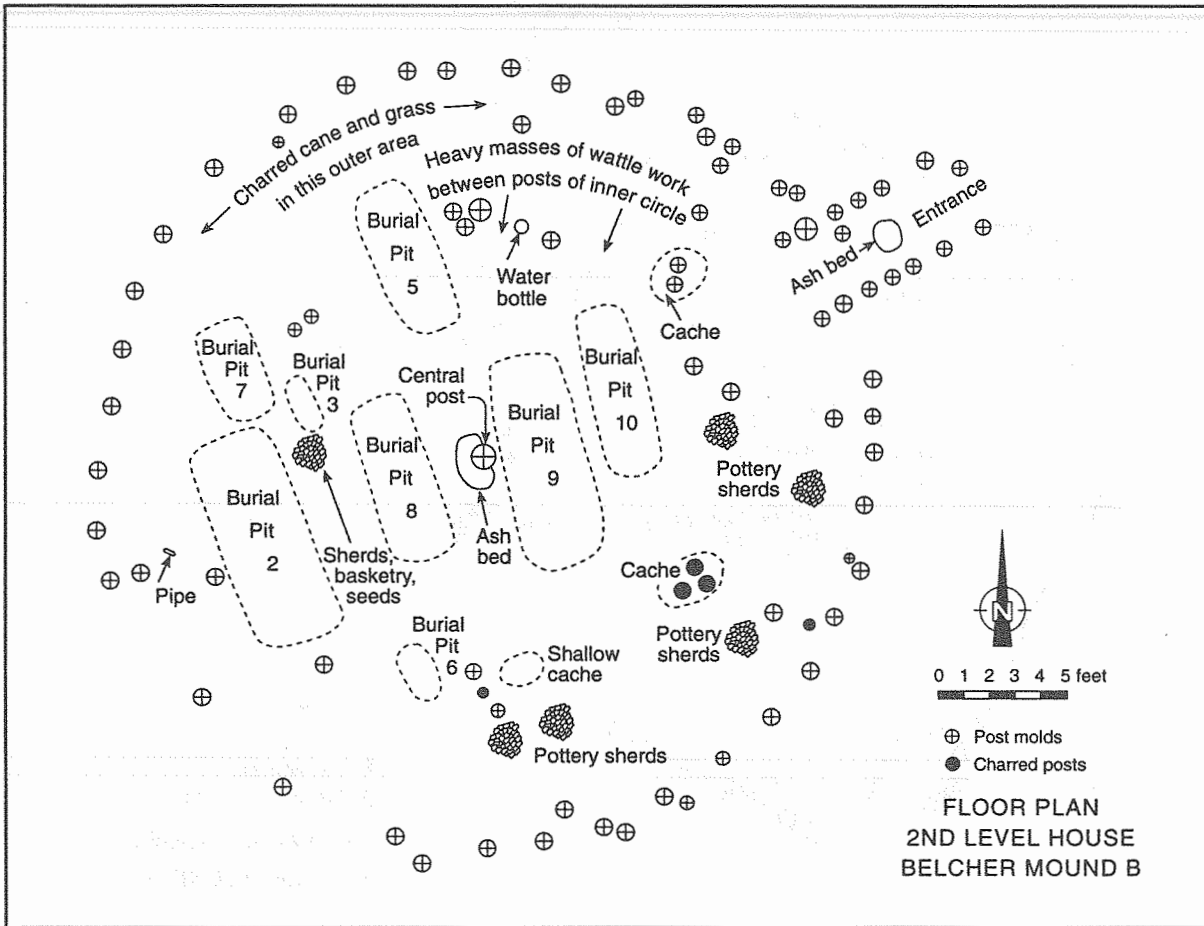
“I first met Glen Evans when he was working at the Plainview Site. My oldest son, who was then 16 or so, and I went by train from here to Abilene, and we met Alex Krieger and he

drove us in his old wooden station wagon. We drove all around the Panhandle and we saw the Canadian River culture. Floyd Studer took us out to Antelope Creek.

Then we worked one day with Glen at Plainview. My son found one Plainview point the day we were working. We found about three Plainview points, and a few flakes, and uncovered some of that mass of bones. That would have been about 1938 or 1939 shortly after Krieger had come to Texas.”

#### Texas Archeological Society.

“I’m 87 now, and I’ve been a member of the Texas Archeological Society for more than 50 years. I think I became a member in 1936. That gives me 53 years. I went out to Abilene to some early meetings. Cyrus Ray and Curry Holden were there, and I corresponded with them. I knew A. T. Jackson and also Dr. Pearce.”



Floor Plan of Circular Structure in Mound B, Belcher Site (after Webb 1940)

### Caddo Conference Beginnings

“About 1939, Alex Krieger came to Texas and Perry Newell went into the service. I worked out in the field and made some trips with Krieger. He had a sharp mind and was a very intellectual person. I’ve always not hesitated in the least to say that the two people I learned most from were Alex Krieger and Jim Ford. And I was fortunate enough to work with both of them quite a lot.

At that time, [Kenneth G.] Orr was at Oklahoma. So a group of us who were interested in the Caddoan area, and Caddoan development, we talked around, and finally decided to have a small meeting here, and see what we thought about developing a Caddoan sequence for the four-state area. So, the first Caddoan planning conference was on my back lawn, and on my back porch, about 1940. Krieger came and [William G.] Haag. King Harris was involved also, and he came virtually every year after the

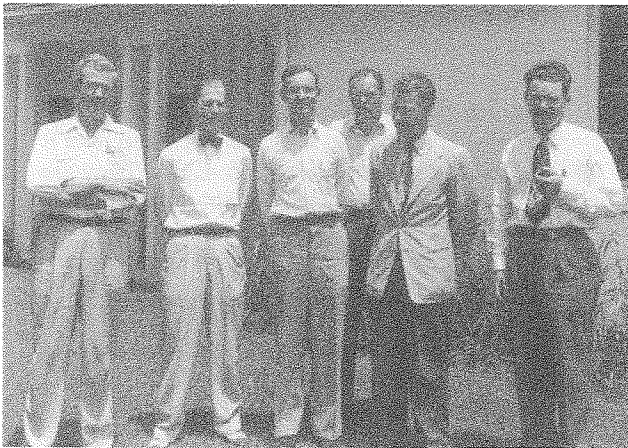
mid-1940s. The Caddo Conference was held nearly every year after 1946. After the Caddo Conferences got going, I didn’t go to as many of the Texas Archeological Society meetings as I had previously.”

### Poverty Point Site

“About 1000 B.C. was the crest of the Poverty Point developments. We first called Poverty Point a non-ceramic culture, and we had to eat our words because we found non-tempered and fiber-tempered pottery at every level of occupation at Poverty Point. It was there from the beginning!

All the major construction of mounds and the semi-crescentic earthworks was at about 1000 B.C. and it probably terminated about 700 B.C.

This site is down in a flat river valley. It’s over a hundred miles from even low hills, and



Caddo Conference Meeting at Dr. Clarence Webb's house, 1950. Left to right: Alex Krieger, Clarence Webb, William Haag, Lynn Howard, John Cotter, and Robert Stephenson. Photograph courtesy of the Louisiana Archaeological Society.

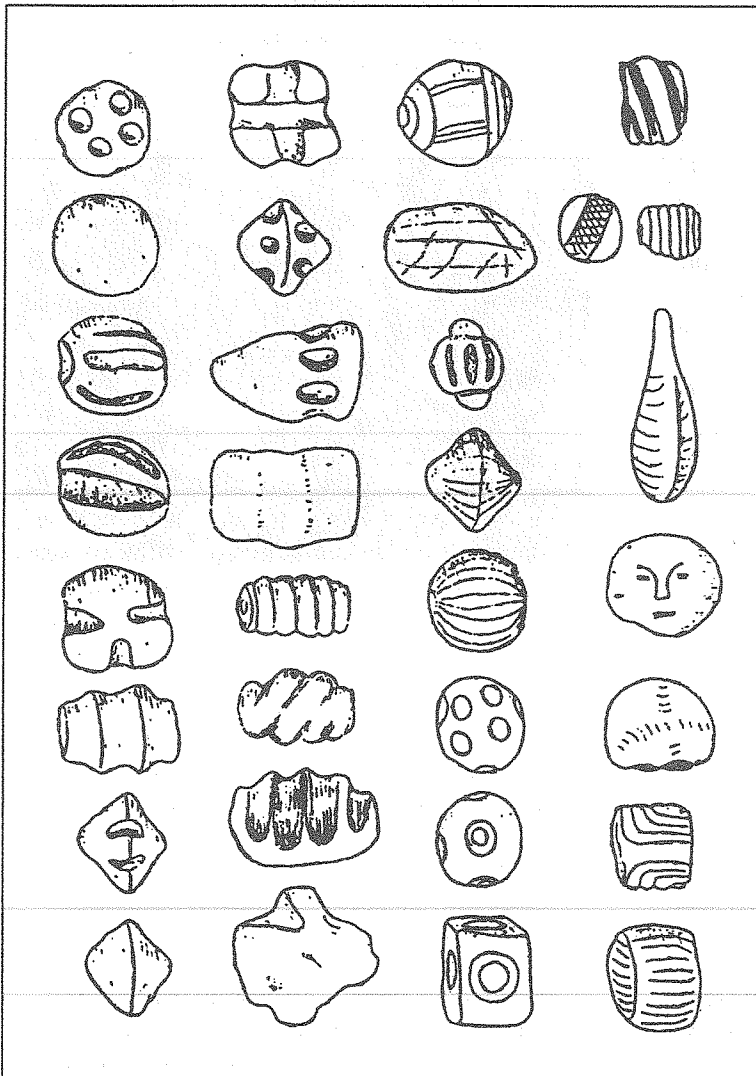
these people didn't have any native stone. They made these clay balls, and the first concept was that they used them instead of hot stones, for boiling food in containers of water. Well, that was baloney! They were never boiling stones, they were baking stones. Along with them we found earth ovens about a foot to a foot and a half in diameter, and a foot and a half to two feet deep. They would dig these out and heat the clay balls in a fire. Then they put the food in damp grass or palmetto in with the hot clay balls, bank it over, and let it cook. At Northwestern and Southwestern Louisiana universities, they carried out experiments doing this process, and they found that it would bake a fish, a ham, potatoes, or a root vegetable, perfectly well in two hours time. Over and over, after we learned to recognize them,

we found these baking pits. Experiments showed that you could reuse the clay balls on average, about ten times, and then they'd begin to crack and break up. They would use 20, or even as many as 100 of these hot stones to do the baking.

Michael Beckman came to Shreveport about 1950, and we worked together on quite a number of sites. He had a tremendous collection from Poverty Point. Jim Ford and I used his collection, along with Carl Alexander's, as the major sources to set up the typology of stone tools and other materials for the first 1954 description of Poverty Point [see Ford and Webb 1956]."

#### John Pearce Site

"One of the important excavations that I was involved in and helped with was the John Pearce site, which is ten miles south of Shreveport. This is the first occupation site of undisturbed San Patrice [Webb et al. 1971]. My original description of San Patrice, was about 1943 or 1944 [see Webb 1946]. John Pearce was the first site at which we found a level completely devoid



Poverty Point Clay Balls, from Webb (1977).

of prior Archaic or of later pottery culture. The San Patrice materials were pure and unadulterated. Although a friend of mine from here did most of the excavating, I helped him with some of it and helped ride herd on him to make sure he was doing it right. He did a good job.

This site was on a crest in a field. The crest had a sand cap, and then tapered off to the red clay. The sand cap had Archaic materials. But the red clay underneath was an unplowed and undisturbed level that contained San Patrice materials for about a foot down. There were drills, and a whole multitude of little tools like graters, end scrapers and side scrapers. San Patrice points are thought to date between 7000 and 8000 B.C. It's not far from Plainview times. And the San Patrice people used all local materials...pebbles and cobbles, mostly of tan to brown chert, out of the gravel bars."

### Red River

"A lot of good sites have been washed away by the Red River changing its channel, just like the Gahagan site went into the river. It's still happening now. A half dozen times, people have brought me pottery bottles. Bottles do pretty well. They drop into the river and float down. They're deposited on the sandbars.

Once it starts cutting, it just moves right through a site. It doesn't matter how big or firm the soil is up at the top, the undercutting happens down where the river's strong current is flowing. It cuts under and drops in. It doesn't wash out from the top down.

The Red was fairly heavily occupied from here around the Big Bend over as far as the Texas line. There are a number of mound sites that haven't been excavated or plundered. The major ones are pretty well protected. The land-owners have kept people off, and have avoided borrowing soil from the mounds like they used to, to fill up holes.

Around this Big Bend from Texarkana to Natchitoches, there must be at least 25 or 30 mounds still standing. There were nearly that many that were away from the river, and they've been pulled down. There are a half dozen that I know of that have been washed into the river. The finest mound existing on Red River in this area is the Battle Mound [3LA1], which is about 35 or 40 feet in height,

and about 600 feet in length. It's an oval shape, and it's a tremendous mound. So far as we can judge, the whole mound was constructed during Caddoan times. The Crenshaw Mound [3MI6] is further up near the Big Bend, and it has been desecrated...dug into badly. They are protecting the Battle Mound pretty well."

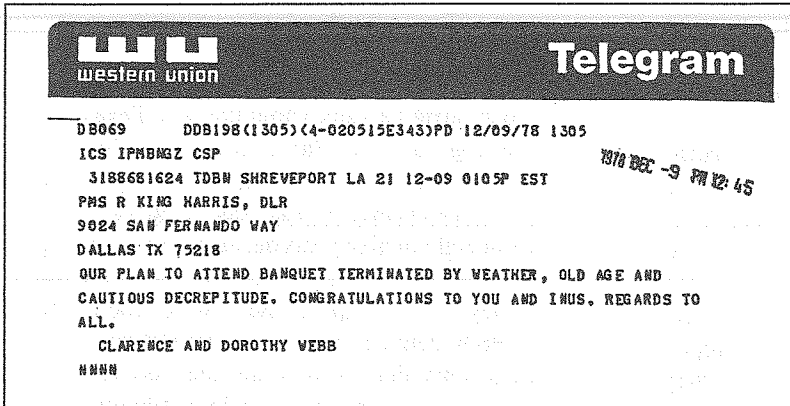
### Resch Site

"I helped people with the Resch site [41HS16] over south of Marshall. That was a site over in East Texas that I invaded. [Chuckle.] I went over and worked with them on weekends. They did an excellent job. From that site we reconstructed the only entire Tchefunchte vessel that exists. It's a jar about 8 inches in height, and 6 inches in diameter, and it is punctated in linear bands. Nicely punctated all the way down to the bottom, and it has little feet around the bottom, which is a giveaway for the Tchefunchte period [see Webb et al. 1969].



Dr. Clarence Webb relaxing at the Resch site, 1968. Photograph courtesy of the Louisiana Archaeological Society.

I suspect it was carried to that site. I think probably all the pottery vessels at that site were carried there, because I think this was a seasonal campsite, not a year-round village. We have no actual proof of that, but the most voluminous of the preserved material was a whole mass...hundreds and hundreds of charred nuts, hickory nuts, walnuts, pecans, and chinkapins, and persimmons. We got carbon 14 dating from those. This was probably a fall seasonal site for collecting nuts and persimmons. A mixture of nuts and dried persimmons would help last through the winter."



1978 Telegraph to R. King Harris from Dr. Clarence Webb. Webb Papers, Louisiana State Exhibit Museum, Shreveport.

1952, a hell of a whirlwind blew into town and his name was Jack T. Hughes! Before I knew it, I was helping dig up a fossil turtle north of town, assembling fossil skeletons in the museum, and helping excavate Indian burial grounds on the Canadian River. WOW! Jack Hughes has been my mentor, advisor, confidant, and colleague since that time.

Interview of Jack T. Hughes done by Curtis Tunnell at the Hughes home in December 1985.

### Dugout Canoe

"About four years ago a log dugout was found in Red River, near the Mound Plantation, and about 12 miles north of the city [of Shreveport]. We were lucky enough to get it out almost intact. It's a 31-foot dugout canoe. It's the only one I've ever seen that has seats at each end. When they hollowed out the interior, they just left the seats. The bottom slopes up and forms a seat and then slopes up and forms another.

My archeological work has been a great pleasure to me, and I had, generally speaking, family approval. Every now and then, my wife encouraged me, 'Now, don't get too over-sold on it!' And I would tell her, 'Remember, I was a doctor before I was an archeologist.' I was a practicing pediatrician for 55 years, so I never found it necessary to take up golf! [Chuckle.]"

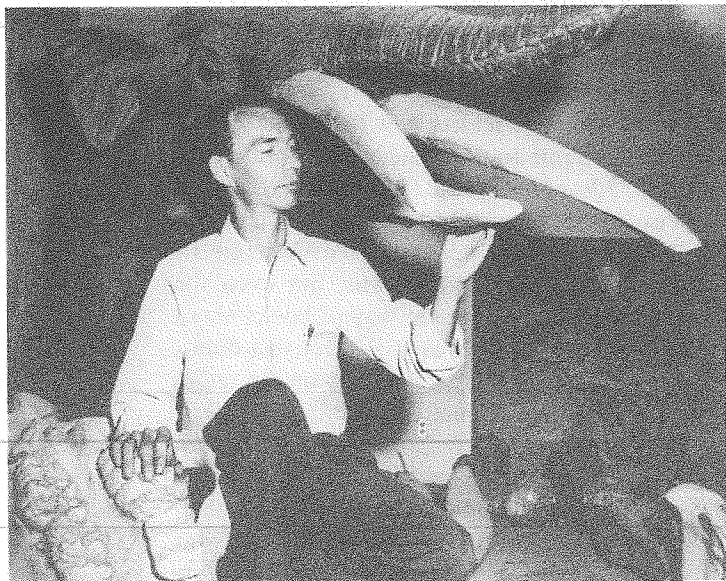
### JACK T. HUGHES

Rocks, fossils, and artifacts fascinated me from my earliest memories. There were lots of all of those things around Turkey, Texas where I was raised. I hounded the old public library for *National Geographic* magazines. In 1951 I hitchhiked to West Texas State University with \$50 in my pocket and started to college (tuition was only \$25 per semester). Working in the Panhandle Plains Historical Museum was right up my alley, even if I was only mopping the terrazzo floors. Then in

### East Texas

"I grew up all over East Texas. My dad was a civil engineer with the Texas Highway Department and we were on the move constantly. I figured up one time that before I left high school, I had been in 22 different schools.

I recall my first interest in archeology very clearly. We were living in Texarkana and I was about four or five years old. Dad was working on a road building job and he had cut a road through an Indian site. One of the men found a nice big dart point and gave it to Dad and he brought it home to me. That thing affected me permanently with a fascination for prehistoric



Jack Hughes in the early 1950s, Panhandle Plains Historical Museum



Indians. That dart point is all it took to turn me on from that time forward.

A little later when we moved down to Huntsville, I found my first dart point. We went out to a place where there was a bridge across a stream, and I was down under the bridge and the water was shallow flowing over a sand bar, and there was another dart point lying there on the bottom.

Going from one school to another so frequently meant that I never really developed long term friendships that kids have when they grow up in the same town. That meant that I had more than the usual amount of time to kill. I did a lot of reading, and a lot of just roaming through the fields and woods looking for places where I could find relics. I remember one of the first places where I realized that you could find arrowheads in large numbers in some spots. Up in Johnson County, way out in the country, I found a big cultivated field that proved to be lousy with artifacts, and numerous projectile points. Later on in the Crockett area and other places, I began to be able to find sites that had lots of arrowheads. I still remember my first recognition of the presence of pottery at a site. There was a little rise near the road in the bottomland, and it was eroded. I found some pieces of flint and there were some other strange stuff scattered around. Little thin hard pieces of stuff. I picked some of this stuff up and handled it, and thought about it, and took it home. Finally it dawned on me that this stuff must have been pottery that prehistoric Indians had made. From that point on I had something to look for besides just arrowheads.

You have to realize how little information was available to youngsters back in the '20s and '30s about prehistoric Indians here in Texas. Most homes had a Bible and maybe an encyclopedia. There were little Carnegie libraries in some small towns, but even the libraries had little in the way of books about archeology. There was radio, but you didn't hear anything about archeology on the radio. There were magazines, but they seldom dealt with archeology, except maybe for Egyptian archeology. None of the teachers in the schools knew anything at all about prehistoric Indians in the East Texas area. So I was virtually helpless without any available information anywhere."

## Texas Archeological Society

"I remember quite clearly when the newspaper carried a story about the new Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society [TAPS] being started out at Abilene by an old gentleman named Cyrus Ray. I guess I was about eight or nine years old at the time. I got up the courage to write a letter and send off some money to get a copy of the first volume of the TAPS bulletin. That was just a revelation to me, the fact that there were some other people in the world who were interested in potsherds, and actually were writing about them. So I ordered volume one and that was the first thing that I ever saw that began to answer some of my questions.

I remember picking cotton for several weeks in order to make a little spending money. Near Wills Point someplace, I picked for a couple of weeks and got together enough money, I believe it was two and a half dollars, to buy a book that I had seen in the window of a bookstore. It was a book by McGothlin and James called *The Romance of Archeology*. That was my first investment in archeological literature. It told me more than I really wanted to know about ancient Egypt and Mesopotamia and Greece and Rome. But it didn't tell me anything about ancient East Texas.

After Volume One of the TAPS Bulletin, I ordered it each year right up until I went off to college. Everything I ever picked up I kept somewhere in sacks and cigar boxes. I was able to understand from reading the first volumes of the Bulletin, the importance of keeping collections separate, site by site. So early on I began to keep these collections separate from different places. And somehow I got the idea that there ought to be some way to designate these spots and to record them. I got county maps at the courthouse showing towns and roads. And I came up with this brilliant idea of using a two-letter designation for the county and a number for each place within the county. Like, Smith County number one and Smith County number two...SM1 and SM2. I also discovered it was fun to make drawings of these relics. So I kept a detailed notebook, which I discovered later on was a catalog.

I gradually began to realize that fishing and hunting got in my way. They interfered with my archeology. So I finally just gave up on hunting

and fishing in favor of archeological prospecting. [Chuckle.]

A modern archeologist in East Texas would not appreciate that the entire end of the state was almost totally cultivated in those days. The bottomlands, all the gentler slopes, and all the uplands were in cultivation in the '20s and '30s. People were growing cotton! There was a lot of subsistence farming and commercial crops such as sugar cane. When I was a kid in East Texas, farmers were people who wore overalls and brogans and straw hats and that whole end of the state was growing cotton. What it meant archeologically was that I had an opportunity to find sites everywhere. Now you'd be lucky to find any, and those collections would be very difficult to make. Everything is grown up in trees or grass."

### My Survey Collection

"As I was finishing high school and looking for a place to go to college, I discovered that down at the University of Texas, this was in '37, that they had a program called anthropology and as near as I could find out, this seemed to include archeology. This seemed to be the only place in Texas where you could study that kind of thing. By then I was 15 years old, and I went off to UT in Austin.

I had built up an extensive survey collection and had it all recorded and mapped and a lot of it cataloged. So when I got down there I inquired with some of the people at the little anthropology museum if they would like to have that collection. I really wanted it to have a permanent home. So I just hauled the whole collection to UT. A. T. Jackson was running the little museum up on the top floor of Waggoner Hall. George Engerrand was teaching, and they had a new young professor named Campbell. So my collections were there in that museum at Waggoner Hall. The collection eventually went out to Balcones research center [TARL]. A few years ago, I went over to see if I could find my old collections, and I was really impressed to discover that there is just drawer after drawer of those old Jack Hughes collections. Most all were still in the original sacks and cigar boxes with the original labels. Every now and then I get a call from some consultant saying they've checked up on some of the sites in regards to

power lines or pipelines. They want to know if I remember something...mostly I'm afraid I don't. I haven't been back to most of those sites, and the countryside has altered so radically that nothing looks familiar any more."

### WPA Projects

"I arrived at the University in 1937, right at the height of the WPA projects and I was fortunate enough to be able to visit many of the digs that were going on. Some of them in the hill country around Austin, and some in East Texas. I wasn't eligible for WPA and they weren't having much in the way of field schools. I did have one field course in archeology under Tom Campbell, I guess it was about '39 or so when I was a junior. It was under a big rock shelter on Onion Creek. I got my first formal training in field archeology with Tom Campbell.

In the late '30s there was a lot of salvage work going full blast. I remember Charles Kelley had a dig in some burned rock middens going on up at the future Lake Buchanan. I'd go out and volunteer my labor and get to ride back and forth with the crew in those big old prison-type vans with wire grills down the sides. I would eat with the crew in their camp shelters.

The men were typical WPA workers. They were mostly people who would be called street people nowadays, I guess. Some were old timers, some unemployed people, laborers, farmers who had to have some work, and such. If the digs were close to town, they'd ride back and forth, but if they were remote, they had tent camps set up. Looking back, what really makes me feel good is realizing how patient and considerate guys like Kelley and Newell were with young inexperienced UT students. They would just treat me as if I were one of them.

I think looking back, they were doing as well as anybody could have done under those circumstances and with those crews. They were operating in a far from ideal world on those WPA digs. Having to put up with, let's face it, some criminals, some bums, some good people, some with natural talent and some who were devoid of it. The archeologists were having to do it all single-handed. They would have 30 or 40 people they would have to handle. They were having to solve problems of payrolls and record keeping. It was seven days a week. They

had to make six copies of payrolls and purchasing forms, and there were daily reports, weekly reports, and monthly reports.

I remember one of the persistent complaints at the various digs that I visited, was the inability of the archeologists to control the loss of relics. Workers were so hard up for a nickel or a dime that whenever they caught on to the fact that there was somebody in the neighborhood who would buy relics...they were all quite certain that they were losing some of their collections that way. It was just impossible for the archeologists to watch everybody every minute on such big crews. They didn't have a big staff and specialized helpers. Looking back, I am impressed with the caliber of work, the quality of work that they were getting done in spite of it all."

### University of Texas

"I was at the University from '37 to '42. I remember one course I had under [Gilbert] McAllister. It was a course in kinship systems and I think I almost spoiled my straight A record. McAllister was always much more concerned with campus and Austin and State politics than he was with some of the anthropology subjects. He was very much an activist and there was lots of politics going on with UT and the Legislature. I got a good bit of my beginning anthropology courses with Engerrand and Campbell... mostly Campbell.

There was a NYA [National Youth Administration] program based on the Youth Administration. For college students it was kinda the equivalent of the WPA for the general public. So I got a chance to be an assistant in the museum and worked for A. T. Jackson who was running the museum at that time. I did things like cleaning the cases and retyping catalog cards. It seems that all the archeological collections were being renumbered and recatalogued for about the third time since they had been collected.

I remember being pretty much in awe of people like Jackson. He was working on *Picture-Writing of Texas Indians* [Jackson 1938a]. I kept on spending every weekend going out from Austin in some direction or other looking for sites and trying to locate burned rock middens and rockshelters. Up in the hill country across the Colorado river, I found a great big rockshelter that had some beautiful red hand

prints on the shelter roof. I mentioned these to Jackson, and I was thrilled he was interested enough and wanted to see them. I got a chance to accompany him, and to guide him on the field trip and to record those pictographs with him in a rockshelter way up in a side canyon."

### Falcon Reservoir

"I finally finished my residency at Columbia University in '51, and I was lucky to get a summer job as a research assistant with Tom Campbell and Alex Krieger, working in the Falcon Reservoir and the Oso Creek Burial Ground down near Corpus [Christi].

In '51, I guess before the Texas River Basin Surveys really got organized, Alex Krieger somehow had gotten funding for initial survey work in future Falcon Reservoir [Krieger and Hughes 1950]. I was working for the University of Texas as a research assistant. It was Krieger's project basically, as I remember. He was the one in charge and he hired me to head the fieldwork. I had a little crew of about three helpers for most of that summer.

We were down there in June and July. We camped up on a bluff top where although it was hotter than blazes, it was at least dry and windy. It wasn't too bad, except I'll never forget one deep test pit. This was on a cut bank that faced west and it was a deep stratified site. And my God, all afternoon the sun blazed into that west facing deep test hole. It was out of the wind, it was in the sun, and it was in white sediment. I mean you'd go in there and dig for about two minutes and they had to pull you out, and let somebody else take a turn at it. That was absolutely the hottest I ever dug at any time, and I hope I have since learned to place test pits a little more strategically. [Chuckle]

We were working in prehistoric and historic sites. I did a pretty thorough report when I got back up to Columbia. I spent a lot of my damn nights up there finishing up a report on that work. In the fall of '51 when I was supposed to be working on my courses and preparation for my exams. I sent off a long detailed manuscript to Krieger and he edited the hell out of it and eventually he came out with some short mimeographed version of it [Krieger and Hughes 1950]. But I had done a very thorough, detailed description of sites and collections. I guess it's filed somewhere at UT.

There was lots of fascinating stuff in that Falcon Reservoir. Of course work was carried on by other people the next couple of seasons down there. I did enjoy digging in one of those ranch houses where those *porciones* had been. The *porciones* were a mile facing the river and 15 miles deep on both sides of the river there in the Falcon area. And each one of those had a headquarters on a bluff overlooking the river. And so you could just count on those stone ruins being on every good bluff. That was the only place I ever found gold. Got lucky in excavating a test pit near one of those stone foundations. I got a sword hilt and gold coin. And I hope that damn thing is still in the collections down at UT...I don't know. It was a Spanish gold coin that dated back in the 1700s sometime."



Falcon Reservoir, Site 41SR39, House 1. TARL Photograph 78B9-1.



Spanish Coin found at Falcon Reservoir. TARL Photograph 78B9-5.

### FRED WENDORF

Although I had known Fred Wendorf for several years, my close association with him began after passage of the Antiquities Code of Texas in 1969. At that time, I asked Fred to help set up the Antiquities Committee, and to help the state prevail in the Platoro lawsuit over the 1554 Spanish shipwrecks off Padre Island. In spite of his heavy workload at Southern Methodist University and his deep involvement in the Nubian project to salvage antiquities threatened by the Aswan high dam on the Nile, he immediately pitched-in to help with the new Antiquities Code problems. His strong hand at the helm helped guide the Antiquities Committee through many troubled waters in the early years.

Interview of Fred Wendorf by Curtis Tunnell, done in his home at Lancaster, Texas on July 12, 1982.

### Beginnings in Archeology

"I was born in Terrell, Texas in 1924, and I got interested in archeology as a young kid. I guess at about the age of nine years old I found some Indian arrowheads in a field not far from my house and began collecting them and got fairly serious about it. By the time I was about thirteen, fourteen years old, I was thinking about it as a career.<sup>9</sup> And, in fact, by the time I graduated high school that's pretty well what I wanted to do. There was considerable family resistance to this idea since archeologists were viewed as suspect on a number of grounds, not the least being that they go around talking about evolution and monkeys, which was not popular in our segment of the country at that time."

Wendorf continues: "I had been in contact with Dr. Pearce very briefly. He had written to me two or three times in response to letters of inquiry. But I think the fundamental person that had an impact on my life during that time was R. K. Harris, who lived in Dallas and was at the Hall-of-State Museum as a curator or something of that sort. Although an amateur, he was quite an excellent man and I would think in the period from the time I was twelve or thirteen when I first met King Harris, it probably was his influence more than anything else that caused me to go into archeology. And he talked to me about what archeologists do, and generally transformed me from a collector into someone who

had a more intellectual interest in archeology and King Harris did that all on his own.

Then there was a man named Duffen, who worked for the University of Texas on the WPA project and was excavating a site in East Texas, somewhere near Grand Saline [the Yarbrough site, see Johnson 1962]. And I went down and visited him. It was an Archaic site, lots of nut stones and pot sherds. And I went down and visited with Duffen and asked him about how to be an archeologist. I think I was fourteen or fifteen, and he said 'Well, go somewhere where they've got a good program in archeology.' 'What would you recommend?' 'Well, I think very highly of this fellow named Emil Haury out at the University of Arizona.' And it was on that, and only that I applied for admission at Arizona and went out there."

### Work in Arizona

"When I got to Arizona I used to go out with Emil Haury on his Sunday afternoon field excursions to look at arroyos and to look at sites. I followed him around sort of like a puppy dog, I think. I was just one of a large number of students that were attracted there to his program. Others were Chuck DiPeso and Joe Ben Wheat. Joe and I became Emil's graduate student gofers. Emil was well liked and much admired and there were a lot of students attracted to Arizona during that period and in large part because of the personality of Emil Haury."

### Military Service

"And then I went into the army for about five years. I was in the ski-troops in the infantry. We were in Italy and I was wounded in the last days of the war. I spent two years in a military hospital. Then I came back from the army in 1947 and went back to the University of Arizona.

And during that time I'd run around and visit with archeologists. I got acquainted with Jimmy Griffin during this time when I was in the military hospital in Michigan. On trips I went to Columbia and got acquainted with Duncan Strong and on a trip to Washington I met Gordon Willey. The army would send me from one hospital to another, and, then I built up my interest in archeology. One of the interesting things that happened during this time...I had

been considered as a West Point appointee by Sam Rayburn for the class of 1945 and so when I was wounded I wrote to him and said that he could take my name off the list. And I said it would be a great favor to me if he could arrange to send me some books on archeology and anthropology. And evidently he had one of his clerks call up the Smithsonian and say send this boy everything you have on archeology and anthropology, and the mailroom at the hospital one day was deluged with great big boxes, several of them. I don't remember how many. Everything the Smithsonian had ever published they sent, because they were anxious to be nice to Mr. Sam, I suppose.

Anyway, that was the basis of my library and I still have every last one of them. For years after that they kept sending me stuff, I was put on their mailing list and I kept getting all those books. It was a very nice thing for Mr. Rayburn to do. I'll never forget Mr. Rayburn because years later he had a very important role in making the Highway Salvage Archeology Program work at the national level.

I was at a field school at Point of Pines in Arizona and met Alfred Kidder and we became well acquainted. Students there included Paul Solecki, Alberto Gonzalez, Ray Thompson, and Bob Stigler. After Point of Pines, I went to Northern Arizona and became a student assistant to Harold Colton. Colton gave me a box of potsherds from a survey of the Petrified Forest and that eventually became my doctoral dissertation. We got \$800 for a field season at the Petrified Forest in '49. It was a shoe string operation with eight of us living in 8 x 10 foot tents. Hotter than the hinges of hell out there! Colton had a deal with a Ford dealer in Gallup. We would buy a truck from him for \$500 and if we brought it back at the end of the season, not too beat-to-hell, he would buy it back for \$425. We had a big old Coca Cola ice chest that I had rented, stolen, or borrowed and once a week we went to Holbrook to get a block of ice and meat and milk. We had to eat it fast and didn't dare open that box but once a day.

Colton was an eclectic man. Much of the stimulus for the development of modern Navajo silver crafts and Hopi pottery came from him. He was in the midst of a fantastic study of Hopi Kachinas. It was a very useful period in my life and working with Colton was a delight. He was low-key, low-pressure, and an unassuming and delightful human being.



Then, with help from A.V. Kidder and Emil Haury, I got admitted to graduate school at Harvard along with students like Ray Thompson, Ray Rupee, Bob McGimsey, Don Lehmer, Ned Danson, and Marie Wormington.”

### Pipeline Archeology

“Something happened in 1950 that had a very important effect on my life and also effected archeology in general. Old Jesse Nusbaum, in Santa Fe, was responsible for the Department of Interior monitoring of the 1906 Antiquities law. Nobody had ever done anything about it. I think that most everybody thought that law was nothing, that it didn’t involve anybody, and no problems were going to come from it. It was just something put on paper. Well, Jesse heard about this big pipeline that was going to be built from Farmington, New Mexico, across the Navajo reservation to California. And Jesse got in touch with the head of the Navajo Tribal Council, who was a good friend of his, and they had been old buddies in their youth. And then he wrote a letter to the president of the El Paso Gas Company saying, “I am responsible for the monitoring of the Federal Antiquities law, a copy of which is enclosed, and I’m wondering what arrangements you’ve made for the consideration of antiquities in construction of your new pipeline which I know will be crossing hundreds of miles of Federal reserve.” Well, you know, the first thing that happened was that this President of the El Paso Gas Company gets this letter and I’m sure he gives it over to his attorney and the attorney says ‘Aah, screw that old duffer.’ [Chuckle.] So, meanwhile they go up to the Navajo tribe and everything is all set. It’s time for the final signing of the contract. Bulldozers are lined up in two locations and it costs them hundreds of thousands of dollars just to have those damn bulldozers lined up. They have people and equipment just sitting there. Now, they were going to do what they call two pipeline spreads. One about at the halfway point going from there to the west and one starting at Farmington going to meet the other.

Well, they go out to the Navajo, at Window Rock, and sit down with the Navajo Council and the Council chairman says, ‘Well, I’m looking over this contract and I don’t see anything that you’re doing about the archeology

in these Indian ruins that you’re going to be destroying when you build this pipeline.’ [Chuckle.] ‘God, man, what do you mean?’ ‘Well, you’ve got to do something. You can’t just go out and destroy these things.’ ‘What do you mean we can’t?’ ‘There’s that kind of law says you can’t and I’m not signing it until you do.’ [Chuckle.]

Well, things hopped and within about thirty minutes they’ve got Nusbaum on the phone and in about an hour they’ve got an airplane on its way to Santa Fe to pick him up. And in four or five hours he’s saying ‘Yes, I think we can arrange something for you. You give us the labor and so on and I’ll recruit some archeologists and you put them on your payroll.’ So everything was all right. Nusbaum does not receive the credit that he should receive for his tremendous stand. Okay, so he was lucky, but it took guts to stand in front of this thing. There was enormous pressure. ‘We’ll have your hide. We’ll take you to the Secretary of the Interior.’ And, we would not have all these archeology projects if it hadn’t been for that Navajo Tribal Chairman. Had push come to shove, the pipeline people might have won. But they would have had enormously unfavorable publicity and the company did not want that. It was the right company, the right time, everything was just right.

That was in 1950. It was about the end of July 1950, somewhere in there. Anyway, one day we were digging at a site in the Petrified Forest and an airplane began flying around and around us. And so, the thing went over and landed somewhere. And in a little while here came a truck and old Nusbaum stepped out of this thing and he comes up and says, ‘I’m looking for Fred Wendorf,’ and I said ‘I’m Fred Wendorf,’ and here’s this big old white-haired man, he’s a big, handsome man. And he says ‘I’m Jesse Nusbaum and I work for the Department of Interior, and I’ve got a proposition for you.’ So he outlined this situation and I say, ‘Well, what do you want from me?’ I’d been planning on going back to Harvard in the fall because I was going to write my dissertation and I had a teaching assistantship there in the department. He said ‘Well, I’d like for you to head this up for me.’ I don’t believe until that minute he knew what he was going to ask me to do. I was probably the first archeologist he came to, and he said you head it. I’m sure that’s how I got it. Anyway, he asked me and I said ‘Well,

all right.' I said, 'how are we going to get some more people' and he said 'I got your name from Stan Stubbs and I was talking with Emil Haury and he suggested Wes Bliss and Paul Ezell.' And I said 'they're both good people.' And I said, 'there's this fella that works with me here, Bill Bullard, he's a good student and there's another fellow in Albuquerque, Frances Cassidy.' And I said 'maybe we can get them and that'll do it, won't it?' And so it happened.

Well, I think Bullard left the next morning and went to pick up Cassidy. Anyway, it was all put together so that Bullard and Cassidy went out the next day and walked the first ten miles of the pipeline right away, and Ezell and Bliss started on the other end and then I went and joined the group about a week after that. The field season was over and everything was put away and the pipeline program began.

Now that was the beginning of a lot of what I consider "modern archeology" because it was done where we felt a real obligation...all of us felt a real responsibility, an obligation to do our work so that we would leave industry and the pipeline company with a favorable regard for archeology. There never was any question in my mind that what we were going to do was pretty good archeology because we were going to get something good out of it. A lot of the modern concepts about having problems...we had problems, go out and find what was in the right-of-way and dig it. That was our problem. Cassidy and Bullard started walking right away and the bulldozers were starting their motors behind them, and I think right at the end of the first ten miles they found the first pueblo. A small pueblo, and they had to dig it. There wasn't any time for formulation of problems or anything else. In today's framework of archeology, it was totally inadequate.

We could move the right-of-way to avoid sites, but there was some pressure on us not to move the right-of-way because it meant a lot of paper work for them. They'd much rather have us dig them. I think the framework in which we operated can be expressed by the following incident. I went to check in with the man who was in charge of the whole program, whose name was R. W. Harris. Lazy Harris they called him because he never had a lazy day in his life. Anyway, R. W. Harris, and I sat around and chattered for a while and measured each other. He said 'Well Fred, there's a way we could have probably fought this but the powers-to-be

decided they did not want to fight it. Whatever their reasons, they told me to take care of it and get it done. Now, anything you need that's within my power to provide you, if you want five men or a hundred men. Whatever you need, if you need road patrols, road maintainers, if you need bulldozers, if you need backhoes, if you need anything that we have, you can have it. I'll ask you one thing, get your job done and get the hell out of the way because I'm going to build a pipeline and I'll run over you if I have to.' [Chuckle.] And I believed him. Now, within that framework we did our job. And we learned how to use bulldozers in excavating sites. And we lost a lot...we lost an enormous amount I'm sure, but we also got a lot!

The first one was a twenty-four inch pipeline and a ditch that was about three-and-a-half feet wide and about six feet deep on the average. The usual working procedure was to walk right behind the survey crews. All the stakes and flaggings were still up so we could walk behind and see those. You're given a jeep, a roll of maps, and a gasoline credit card and they say "Go!" And that was our equipment. A jeep, with a shovel in it to dig out, and that's all you need, the right-of-way is down there about ten miles. And this was the kind of start that everyone got.

We'd walk the right-of-way and clear it or mark the sites. Everyday, if we found something, we'd go back and tell them what station number so the boss would know where things were and what possible problems were ahead of them. Then we'd immediately start digging and maybe just one man digging like hell, and the other man still had to walk ahead. These bulldozers, if they got there before he finished, they'd leap over and go on. And, so, the other guy had to keep surveying. Well, sometimes in one day we'd get four or five sites. So you can see what kind of frantic pressure that the archeologists were under.

Ten miles a day!...They would lay pipeline at ten miles a day. Right after the bulldozers came the pipe trencher digging this trench and we had to walk that trench, too. We came across lots of sites that you didn't see on the surface. We found lots of archeology. So it was walk, and then walk again, and meanwhile dig like mad.

As we got a little ahead of them and the pressure of the first few weeks was over, then we realized we could begin to move the line this

way and miss this site. Which we did on several occasions. We were well paid, the best paying job in archeology in the United States at that time. Because we got a fairly good salary and a big per diem. It was around \$500 a month and \$20 a day per diem. And you couldn't spend it, you know, you were living out there in the dad-gum back of your pickup. So, it was a very good deal for an archeologist.

Farmington was the headquarters for the collections from New Mexico and Flagstaff was headquarters for collections in Arizona and I would move things back and forth. Because they were such big spenders, the pipeline company was a big event to happen in Farmington. It was a real boomtown. There was one little hotel in town, and the pipeline company just grabbed a batch of rooms out of there and said those are yours. And that worked fine until Cassidy found a bunch of burials, and brought these skeletons into the rooms. The rooms were being cleaned by Navajo maids and they had these burials all in sacks. Fifteen burials in paper sacks and one of the maids made the mistake of lifting one paper sack and she saw this skull in there and the hotel emptied of maids...no maids in the hotel! [Chuckle.] And so then we had to move everything out of the hotel.

Well, you know we'd come in at night when the pipeline crews quit. Our workers would follow the same time schedule as they did. We would go to work in the morning before dawn. We might be through by four o'clock in the afternoon and they'd come in and get cleaned up. We were young and vigorous at that time and so we'd scrub pottery at night. And, of course, we managed to clog all the plumbing in the hotel. [Chuckle.]

But the company treated us very well. And about this time the news media kind of got onto it and there was a big, several page spread on it in *Life* magazine, and it was just great. Great publicity for the company, you know their attitude was, 'we'll spend \$100,000 on this but we've got \$200,000 worth of publicity. We couldn't have bought those pictures in *Life* for \$200,000.' They were really very happy with it. And all because of Jesse Nusbaum! That was one of the best services any one individual has ever done for American archeology.

Late the following spring we reached California and the Company kept us on to get the material written-up. The Company asked me to stay on with them as working assistant to

R.W. Harris, but I didn't give it fair consideration, because I was tuned into archeology. I went back to Santa Fe and took a job with the Museum for \$200 a month. Then in '52 the Company called and said we are going to run another pipeline from Farmington to Gallup and we'd like for you to do it. I was pleased, because it meant the Company was impressed with archeology.

We did several other pipeline projects and it gave us a very different idea about Southwestern Archeology, and about the kinds of things that exist in the archeological record. People had been concentrating on the larger and flashier sites, where it was comfortable. We went straight across country in remote areas and looked at everything. We got a very different view!"

### Highway Salvage Archeology

"During that time, I had to do a lot of driving up and down Highway 66. One of the things I began to notice when driving down the highway was lots of Indian villages by the right-of-way that had been partially destroyed in the building of Highway 66. When that pipeline project was over, two or three months later, I was invited to go to the Rotary Club or Kiwanis Club in Santa Fe, and talk about the El Paso Gas Company's archeology program. When I got through, I said, 'You know it's a pity that our State and Federal Government can't live up to our laws the way private industry does.' I showed slides and talked about the sites that had been destroyed by Highway 66. 'Here's a Pueblo by the right-of-way that's been cut by Highway 66, it was destroyed five years ago, when that highway was built. Here's another one, and here's another,' I said. 'I'm sure that between Gallup and Grants, New Mexico, there are 50 sites on that highway right-of-way that have been destroyed when that highway was built. And there's a state antiquities law that says you can't destroy these things, it's state land, all of that is state land or federal land. Why don't we do something about it?'

Well, I was standing around afterwards, and everybody was talking to me and two fellows walked up. The first fellow said, 'My name is Spike Keller,' and the other one said, 'My name is Peter Irwin.' Keller said, 'You know I'm the head of the Federal Bureau of Public Roads in

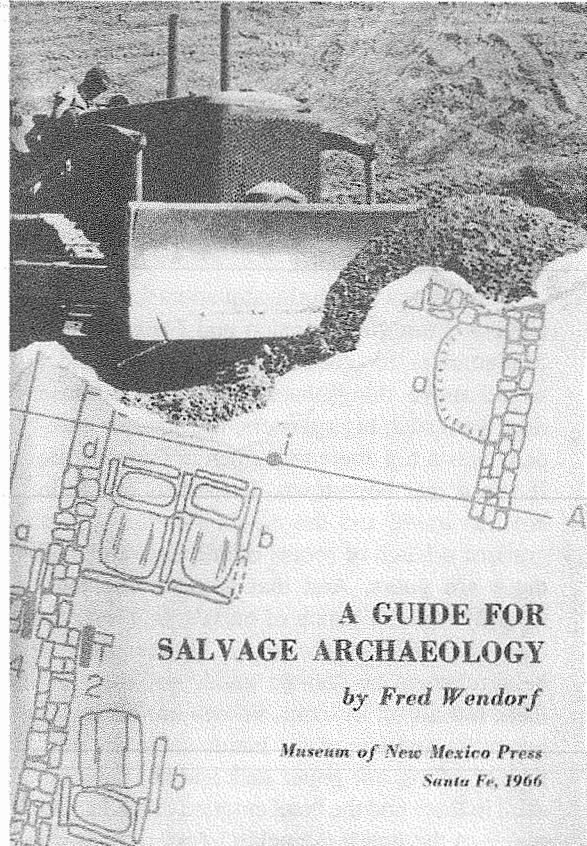
New Mexico.' And Pete Irwin said, 'I'm the Chief Highway Engineer of the State of New Mexico.' I almost fell on the floor! [Chuckle.]

They said, you know you kinda hit a tender nerve with us with that comment about destroying archeological sites on public lands in New Mexico. Why don't we get together and talk about this? So I said, 'I'd be delighted to!' I asked Jesse Nusbaum, who was my mentor, to join me in this conversation we had with Keller and Pete Irwin. Out of that emerged the New Mexico Highway Archeological Salvage Program. Roughly what it amounted to was that the Museum of New Mexico would agree to provide me and my time, and the Highway Department would give me the plans for all of their construction projects in the State of New Mexico. We'd be available every month at the advertisements and bid openings. I would then go and survey those, and if I found archeology on them, I would ask for the labor and they would provide the workers that I needed and I'd excavate the sites. So we started looking for sites, and right off we started finding sites.

There was a lot of interest in this among the highway people all over the United States, in part because the head of the Bureau of Public Roads was an amateur archeologist. Also, a lot of highway people had seen archeological sites being destroyed by roads under construction. Some of them had collections of artifacts. There was a lot more intellectual curiosity in the citizenry than a lot of us intellectuals knew. Keller and Irwin were both very popular people on the national highway scene. They got me on programs to give talks at national meetings and state engineers meetings [see Wendorf 1966].

But it all kinda came to a head about a year after we started the program, when a forester was going to build a timber access road and hit three or four good sites. He said, 'what'll you charge us to dig these sites?' I said 'I'll dig them for you and I figure labor will come to \$600.' He put in a voucher, but some mean bookkeeper in Albuquerque didn't like what was being done, so he sent it to the Controller General of the United States in Washington. When that happened, it could have killed the whole thing.

So Spike Keller said, 'You've got to go to Washington and have a talk with C. D. Curtis, the head of the Bureau of Public Roads, and get his interest in this thing. Take him one of them damned pots that you found, and get him to help us.' So I went to visit with Curtis, and he said



Cover to *A Guide for Salvage Archaeology* by Fred Wendorf (1966).

'I've got you an appointment to see the Controller General.' I went over to visit with him and the guy was hostile as he could be. He said, 'Why are we wasting federal money for that? Why did you think it was part of construction? Why should we pay?' I kept giving my reasons over and over again.

So I left and I thought sure we had lost. But evidently C. D. Curtis had a private word with the Controller General and we got an opinion from him that this was an appropriate billing, and they had to do it from then on. I can assure you, after that there were no more \$600 bills! [Chuckle.]

Well, it was now about 1954, and the Federal Highway Act that would build big interstate systems was under consideration. Spike Keller, Mr. Curtis, and two New Mexico politicians were very important people at this point in time. Senator Chavez was chairman of the Senate Public Works Committee and in the House, Dempsey was the vice-chairman of the House Public Works Committee. Everything was ready to put something about archeology in this bill.

Spike said you might be giving some thought to what language you'd like to have in the Federal Highway Act. He said, 'I've written out something here on a piece of paper that I think you ought to have in your hands all the time. Somebody is going to call you one of these days and ask you what you think they ought to put in the bill. Just tell them this.' What he had written down was very simple, in his very crude handwriting he said, 'Any of the funds being appropriated in this Act may be used, as approved by the Chief Highway Engineer of any state, for the purposes of archeological salvage.' Very simple! Any of the funds, no limit, as approved by the chief highway engineer. That was intended to avoid those states where there was some hostile reaction already beginning to build up...Texas, for example. Our Texas Highway Department was very opposed to this whole idea.

Sure enough, I got a call from the chief of staff of the Public Works Committee one day from Senator Chavez's office. He said, 'Dr. Wendorf, I understand you're interested in some language for this new Highway Act we are considering, and we are drafting it right now.' And I said, 'Yes I am.' He said, 'Could you tell us what language you have in mind?' I said, just a second, and I reached in my pocket where I always carried the paper which Spike gave me, and I got it out. I said, I think something along this line might be very useful, and I read it to him. 'I think something like that would be very helpful too, thank you very much,' he said, and he hung up.

The Society for American Archaeology created a committee for highway salvage archeology, which I was appointed chairman of. We began to lecture, and I must have given a hundred lectures around the country. But, so far as I know, there was never any testimony against that provision. No opposition at all.

Then Mr. Curtis invited me to come to Washington again and sit down with him and draw up the policy procedures that would implement this provision of the Act. The procedures provided that there would be no funds paid for study of materials away from the right of way. It would pay full costs of any archeological work done on the rights of way, but it would not pay for analysis of the materials and publication. I felt this was unduly restrictive, and knew that it was going to be difficult for many states to do this. We went along for a year or two after it was

passed and there were many states that tried to get programs going under this system. But a lot of complaints were beginning to accumulate that this simply wasn't going to work. By this time Curtis had left the Bureau of Public Roads and there was a new and hostile regime in there. We were having serious problems with the Bureau of Public Roads on this procedural memorandum.

So it was arranged that I would go back to Washington. I went back and got reacquainted with Mr. Rayburn...his assistant said, 'I'll tell you what to do. You go over and have a little talk with McCann at the Bureau of Public Roads and see what can be done about it. Make sure they understand that you're going to be visiting on the Hill.' I went over and again I hit a stone wall.

So I went back to see Mr. Rayburn, and we sat and visited and he said, 'Well tell me Dr. Wendorf, what is this problem you're having with the Bureau of Public Roads?' I told him briefly what it was, and he turned to an assistant and said, 'Why don't you call those people for me and see if you can't get this thing worked out, it seems very simple.' The next morning, Mr. Rayburn's man called up the deputy commissioner and said, 'Mr. Cross, this is so-and-so in Mr. Rayburn's office, and I'm calling at the congressman's request. These archeologists seem to be having some problems with you about working out the arrangements that were put in the Federal Highway Act, and the restrictions that you have put on it. Is there not some way that this can be resolved without us having to write legislation to that effect?' Mr. Cross said, 'Well I'm sure there is.' With that, he said 'Why don't I ask Dr. Wendorf to come over and visit with you and you two get this worked out while he is here.'

Well, I went back and the Bureau of Public Roads man said, 'Goddamn, why didn't you tell me you were going to see Sam Rayburn?' [Chuckle.] And I told him 'Well you know I've known Mr. Sam almost all my life.' I said 'I'm so pleased that you can do something about this.' It was clean sailing from then on, and there's never been any more problems."

### Midland Discovery

"While we were working on a pipeline out of Plains, Texas, a fellow named Pete Glasscock



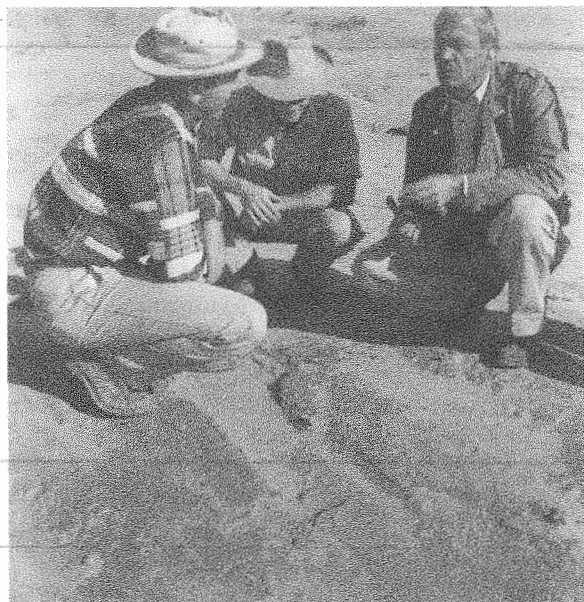
walked in one day. He was a fine fellow, about my age, and an amateur archeologist. He wanted to talk about early man sites. He said, 'I've been to a lot of early man sites that have been worked in New Mexico and Texas, and I always go to back dirt piles and pick up the points that the archeologists miss.' I asked what was the best early man site he had ever seen. He said it was a site near Midland, Texas where he had gotten 40 or 50 Folsom points. He said, 'I also got a human skull from there.' When I asked him what else he found there besides Folsom points, he said there wasn't any thing there except Folsom points and the skull. Then I got a little more interested! I said, 'Tell me more about this skull.' He said it was just like all the other bones. And I said, 'What other bones?' He said the blowout was loaded with all kinds of fossil bones, and the skull was mineralized just like all the animal bones. I said, 'What are you going to do with that skull?' He said, 'I'll send it to you if you like.' So he sent it to me. It came in a matchbox, just a kitchen matchbox. The biggest piece was about the size of a half-dollar, certainly no bigger than a silver dollar. When I opened that box and looked at the mineralization on that skull, I knew I had an ancient skeleton. The first thing I did was get in touch with Dale Stewart and send him the skull. He was at the National Museum. And I thought, I got too many things to do on this pipeline. Why don't I contact Alex Krieger and give him the skeleton. So, I dictated this letter and said that I had just gotten this very old skull, and here is the man's name, and I think it would be very appropriate for you to follow up on the study of it. In effect, I gave it to him, and said 'I'll be glad to send the skull to you if you want it.' My secretary, Sally, finished taking the dictation, and put her pencil down and said, 'Fred, don't send that letter. If it's an old skeleton, then you do it!' So I said, 'tear up that letter.' [Chuckle.]

Then, I called Alex and said that I got what looks like an old skull, and I'd like for us to go and look at the site together. I got Charlie Steen and Jesse Nusbaum from Santa Fe, and Jack Hughes and Glasscock, and we all met down at Midland in about April 1953, or '54. We all went out to the site, and there were all these fossil bones, horse teeth, elephant bones, fossil turtles. Glasscock put out his hand and said this is where we found the skull. So we dug a little pit there, and we found one more little scrap of

bone. Then we went back to the bar in Midland for a post mortem.

Jack Hughes says, 'You can't do anything with it, it's totally on the surface, nothing can be done about it.' I said, 'Well I think something can be done with it.' And I asked Alex if he would join me in studying it. Alex said, 'Well, maybe something can be done.' Everybody was negative except Alex and me. I asked Alex to join me and he said, 'Yes I will.' I said, 'We'll do a chemical analysis of the bones and see if there is any difference between the skull and the other fossil bones. We'll excavate and see if we can get any more of the skeleton.' So Glasscock agreed to it.

I wrote a one and a half page letter to the Wenner Gren Foundation and told them about the site, and I said I would like to have \$3,000. I said, 'If you'll send me the forms, I'll make application.' I received a telegram back for \$3,000! That's the way Wenner Gren operated when Paul Fejos ran it. Within a week or two I was back down there, and we dug the things reported in the book [Wendorf et al. 1955]. Glasscock had mainly projectile points and a few channel flakes. In July, I guess it was '54, Alex arranged to come to Santa Fe and spend a week. We wrote *The Midland Discovery* that week. It was a day and night job, but we got it written in that time, with him at the typewriter and me dictating, and then alternating sentences.



Midland Site. Left to Right: Fred Wendorf, Edward B. Jelks, and Alex D. Krieger. TARL Photograph 41MD1-46.



Excavations at the Midland Site, Scharbauer Ranch.  
TARL Photograph 41MD1-15.

Albritton's section on the geology can be clearly identified. I think Alex Krieger is one of the very great men in American archeology! Had he not had this handicap of hearing and the enormous distraction of the noises in his head, he would have been the man in American archeology right now...no doubt about that.

We announced it to the press that we had a Pleistocene skull. It got us very good national publicity. *Life* magazine and *Time* magazine carried a big spread. There was a big picture showing Glasscock and me in a trench there digging. It happened that Jesse Nusbaum had been standing beside us when that picture was taken and he knew it, but *Life* magazine cropped him out of the picture and it made him so mad. He felt that I had something to do with the fact he was cropped out, and it was my great regret, because he was a very important man in my life. A few months afterwards, the University of Texas Press published the book, Alex saw to that.

I had gotten acquainted with Dr. Sellards, and he also got a bent nose out of this thing. It turned out that he had dug in that same damn blowout, back five or 10 years earlier. He felt it was his site, and here I was coming along and publishing these things. Apparently he had dug fossil animals about 50 yards from where the skull was found, but he didn't see any artifacts.

I also met Glen L. Evans, who was living in Midland then, and he kinda took me under his wing. He was telling me to be very careful and cautious about my stratigraphy, and that there were lots of problems in dealing with those sand dunes.

For awhile I had the skull at the Museum of New Mexico for Glasscock. He owns it! When I left the museum, he went and got it and had it at his house, until the library in Midland borrowed it for an exhibit. When I moved to Dallas, people from Midland would say, 'It's terrible what's going on with that skull, they are mistreating it.' I called Glasscock and asked him to go by and see if he was happy with the way they were treating the skull. A few weeks later I got it in the mail, and it was in several pieces. They had covered it with plasticine wax. It was terrible. So, I had to send it back to Dale Stewart, who restored it again.

Curry Holden offered me a job as assistant director of the museum, so I moved to Lubbock in 1956, and stayed there for two years. I hired Earl Green who was working as a geologist for an oil company. He came to work with me as the field man. He did most of the museum field-work, and he did it very commendably. He stayed on at the museum and became the director when Curry retired.

I first met J. Charles Kelley when he came to Santa Fe. He was on a sabbatical and was working in Durango. He had an office next to mine, and I got to looking at his pottery, and he got to looking at mine. I was thinking that if I took some of my red on white sherds and threw it into his collection, he couldn't find it. There were a number of very peculiar design motifs and they were very similar in both collections. J. Charles was always someone I liked to talk with."

#### DEE ANN (SUHM) STORY

Over the past 34 years, I have spent many pleasant hours in the home of Dee Ann and Hal Story. I worked with Hal at the Texas Memorial Museum and had the greatest respect for him as a soft-spoken person and fine artist. Dee Ann and I have always had a lot of jawing to do about archeology. For at least 29 years I also enjoyed visiting with another member of their family, "Creature," a bluejay they rescued and adopted as a baby.



Dee Ann Story reconstructed ceramic vessels from the Gilbert Site (41RA13), mid-1960s.

Interview with Dee Ann Suhm Story done by Curtis Tunnell on March 3, 1978 at her home in Austin, Texas.

### University of Texas

"I was born and raised in Houston, and my birthdate was December 12, 1931. My father was Carl Eugene Suhm and my mother was Emma Schumann.

I got interested in archeology in high school for not really a very good reason. We had to write a senior theme, which I thought was kind of a chore and, being cute, I would write about some silly thing. At the time, it struck me that wouldn't it be kind of an absurd occupation being an archeologist. So, I started going to the library and reading a bit about what archeologists did and it got interesting. And so, my term theme was that I wanted to be an archeologist and why. And I shocked myself, you see.

In the spring of '52 I transferred to the University of Texas. One of my teachers came up and said that the archeologists were looking for someone to do office work. 'Can you type?' And I said, 'Well, sort of.' So, she said, 'Why don't you go over and apply?' I did and I didn't get the job. Ed Jelks hired someone, I am sure far more confident and a lot better looking, but she didn't work out. So, he called me. I suppose I was the only other applicant that would work for him and I was so bad at typing that Ed used

to grade my typing and he nurtured it and it has never improved greatly, but he then put me to something that I did, hopefully, a bit better—cataloging artifacts and the like. And that really was when I became aware of Texas archeology. I really had no concept...it never crossed my mind that there was any archeology in Texas. It was really through Ed and that office that I got interested in archeology.

It was the Interagency Archeological Salvage Program but was called the River Basin Surveys and at that time, was administered by the Smithsonian, through Frank Roberts. Then maybe about '53 or '54, the office closed. This was when Eisenhower was President and he simply cut out the appropriations. That is when Ed left Texas and went to Jamestown, Virginia.

I finished my B.A. in '53, much to my surprise. The department, at that time, consisted of Tom Campbell, Gilbert McAllister, Chuck Lange, Dr. Engerrand, and Winfield Bailey, I guess Alex didn't teach. He was purely research, although he was coordinator of the Falcon [Reservoir] project, which was going on when I was there. And then, I worked two years full-time and finished my masters degree."

### Handbook of Texas Archeology

"I think, as well as I recall, probably in the spring of '53, I took Tom Campbell's course on Texas Indians or Texas Archeology. As a term project, I decided to try to pull together what had been published on culture complexes and I decided what I would do is make a grand chart. And I turned that chart in as my paper and it had a little summary preceding it. Ed wanted a copy, and so I made another copy for him. Then, he encouraged me...why didn't I write it down and write a few paragraphs about each of the complexes with a history...the concept of the complex and what it was based on and so forth. I said that I would try. And so I started, and plugged away on it, probably on through the fall. Then I showed it to Ed and he showed it to Alex. It obviously needed a great deal of work, to say the least. So, we started, Ed and I, started going over and editing and expanding statements and began elaborating on the trait lists and trying to make the style more uniform. I

think we worked on that a good deal into the summer of '53, especially in the evenings we would get together. Then, Ed left. What I had done, instead of doing anything on typology, I just had a bibliography for every projectile point or any other thing that had been named. I just listed it and then all the publications which had any useful kind of definitions or descriptions.

It was primarily Alex who thought that wasn't enough and that we ought to do the typology. So, then Alex and I started on that. We got someone to pull out every projectile point that the University had. We worked mostly on projectile points. We had every table in Pearce Hall lab occupied for months and months—it seemed like years and years. Full of projectile points. And we would work only in the evenings and weekends. I was working then full time for the department. There was enough to do as departmental secretary. So, Alex and I would get together, it seemed like every evening, and work until 11:00 or 12:00. We would sort it and then we would re-sort it, then we would debate, then we would sort it again. We started out, first, doing measurements and doing plots and doing distribution studies from sites, but that didn't last very long. It became totally intuitive. You know, we would look and then we would kind of look over and see where they were from and say, 'well, that sort of looks good,' and we would end up with some miscellaneous specimens. Then we would debate, 'Oh, no, that goes there,' and this went on and on for what seemed like forever. Finally we made up our minds, and then began all the business of photographing them and cutting them out. We mounted them all with rubber cement.

Alex really had the ceramics very much in hand...the Caddoan ceramics...and he already had a lot of photographs. We took some more.

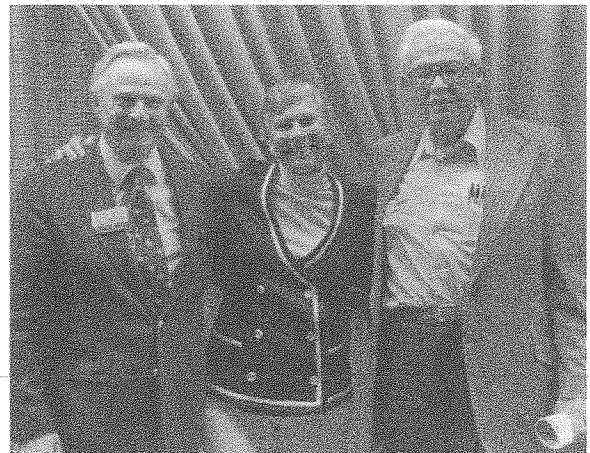
A lot of the artifact types had already been named. Kelley [J. Charles] got very upset at us, but we thought it over and we did make a wise decision. Kelley had named quite a number of things in his reports on the Lehmann rockshelter in Gillespie County [Kelley 1947a], the thing he did on Clear Fork and Round Rock foci in *American Antiquity* [Kelley 1947b] and a thing in *El Palacio* [Kelley 1948]. He also simply had names like "Smithwick small stem" and others. By that time, names like Pedernales and Perdiz were commonly used...except it was "Pedernales indented base" and "Perdiz pointed stem."

Ed [Jelks], in his Belton reservoir report [Miller and Jelks 1952], probably was the first to describe things like Perdiz, Scallorn, and Pedernales. He introduced the names "Darl" and "Ensor" which were named after people—E. O. Ensor and Darl Hill. I tried to run down the origin of the names "Fulton" and "Gibson." Fulton, I think, is named after Fulton, Arkansas. Gibson, someone told me, was a secretary around the Anthropology department. I don't know if that is true or not, but I have not found Gibson on the map, so I am inclined to believe it.

Joe Ben Wheat had introduced Goose Creek pottery. I kind of think Joe Ben got a lot of that from Tom Campbell's dissertation, or from conversations with Tom. Anyway, some of those names, a great many, we introduced. We picked some geographical names, and things like "Lange" were named after Chuck Lange. We named a pottery type [Bailey Engraved] after Bill Bailey.

But, the projectile points were the most amount of trouble and we really did look at all the points that we could get our hands on and even borrowed some private collections from areas where we had no good samples. Names like "Nolan" were fairly commonly used. In Alex's report on the Davis site [Newell and Krieger 1949] he had "Gary" and "Yarborough."

We worked on, probably through the summer of '54, boning up and we did all the typing of the manuscript ourselves and all the plates and things which take such an immense amount of time. Alex got a little bit of money from



Handbook of Texas Archeology authors at the 1987 Texas Archeological Society meeting in Waco, Texas. Left to right: Edward B. Jelks, Dee Ann Story, and Alex D. Krieger. Photograph by the author.



research in anthropology to buy some of the film and pay the cost of developing. That is actually the only funds we had. Alex was editor of the Bulletin and he hadn't received many manuscripts for that next one. So the Society decided to publish the Handbook in '55 [Suhm, Krieger, and Jelks 1954]."

### Professor Engerrand

"I had two courses under Engerrand. Oh, what an experience. He was a fantastic man. Oh, he could ask the details, incredible. He had a really definite sense of humor, but he never changed expressions, so you had to know the man a bit to realize it was his humor. He loved to pass around little mementos in class. It would include things, well like I took his course in races, peoples and languages of Europe, and he would pass around a letter, quite yellow from age, written in Basque. We should all have the privilege...he was Basque!...to see what Basque looked like written. Little things like this. He used to teach an intermediate course in physical anthropology and he would pass around a series of photographs of great apes. And there was one of a chimpanzee that had a very humorous expression and as it would go around the room, there would be these little snickers when the students would see this photograph. Finally, as it got to the back of the room, there was one girl, it was not a snicker, she just roared with laughter and at this point, Engerrand stopped his lecture and he was a bullet fast lecturer. He was on a little speaking platform and he came down and, Engerrand didn't walk exactly, it was a cross between a walk and a run. He charged down the aisle, stood right in front of this student and shook his finger and he said, 'There will be no race prejudice in my class.' [Chuckle.] He turned around and returned to the platform and started speaking again. Never cracked a smile.

I had a course from Engerrand and was overwhelmed by the man, to say the least, and scared to death to talk to him. One day I came to campus some place near the main building and I said, 'Hello, Dr. Engerrand.' He always walked very, very fast. He just stopped suddenly and he started circling me. He walked around me several times and he stood right in front of me and said, 'I know you. You are the one that married the Japanese general.' And shooooop, off he went. [Chuckle.] My goodness, he got me terribly confused.

He lived over off Enfield Road, and he would walk to the department every day. You could see him. For a while, I had a duplex on Hartford and I would see Dr. Engerrand, but I knew better than to ask Dr. Engerrand if he wanted a ride. But, you would see that tie flapping in the breeze, just crisply going along. He walked to and from school, except when it would rain. When I was departmental secretary, it was such a predictable pattern. It was a rainy day and Dr. Engerrand had walked to school. You can just bet your money the phone would ring and it was Mrs. Engerrand. You know, they spoke French in the home. So, she had quite an accent when she spoke English and she would ask to speak to Professor Engerrand. Well, the departmental faculty offices were in Benedict Hall at the time. The department office was in Pearce Hall. I would have to go over to Benedict and get Dr. Engerrand. Well, I couldn't keep up with Dr. Engerrand. I would tell him that his wife was on the telephone. You knew what she was going to say, 'Don't walk home, I am going to come pick you up' because it was raining. So, he would come darting over and he would not pick up the phone until I got there. There was only one phone, and he would say, 'Is this it?' and I would say, 'Yes, sir.' And he would pick it up and he would say, 'Okay, I will not walk home.' This went without fail.

Then, one time, Dr. Engerrand...I think he took a liking to me as a student. I did okay or fairly well on his exams by luck. And I was always afraid to talk a great deal to Dr. Engerrand because it would be so apparent how ignorant I was. Well, you know, for instance, the man thought that any student that didn't command four or five languages was really quite uneducated. He would always give me books to read—French, German...and I would say, 'But, Dr. Engerrand, I don't read German' and I would get a lecture. I was so embarrassed. He would give me something in French and I would say, 'I don't know this' and I would get another lecture. So, finally, I just got to where I would take them and I would say, 'Thank you' and I would keep them a while and return them to Dr. Engerrand, hopefully when he wasn't there—drop them in his box so he wouldn't ask me too many questions about them.

One day, he said, 'Come here, I want to show you something.' He took me in his office and he opened up the bottom drawer of his desk and there were two shiny, shiny shoes and he



says, 'You know, those are my lecture shoes, these are my walking shoes.'

When I went out to California, I was terribly homesick at first and I got this package and it was several books and on the inside it said, 'To Dee Ann Suhm.' It didn't say from whom, but I could recognize Dr. Engerrand's handwriting. It didn't even have his name. It just said "Department of Anthropology, University of Texas." But, his handwriting was a highly distinct and very beautiful handwriting and he had sent me some books out to California that he wanted me to have. I was very flattered. I was always scared to death, Dr. Engerrand would find my true worth, and I would have disappointed him. He was a remarkable man.

Tom Campbell said that every year, Engerrand would come in and hand in a resignation, when Tom was departmental chairman. He would say, 'This is the last year. I am not going to teach anymore.' And so Tom would just kind of put it away and a month or two later, Engerrand would say, 'Well, I think I will teach one more semester.' This went on for years.

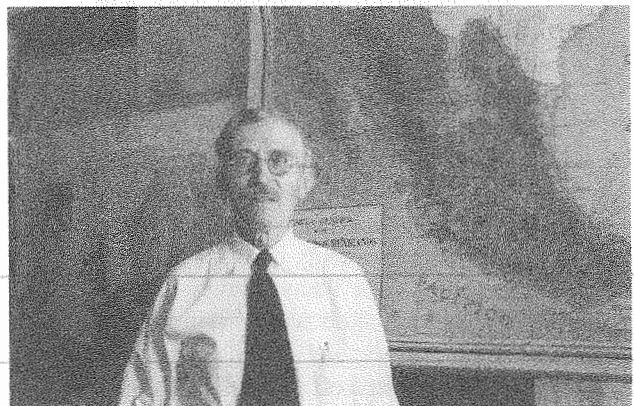
He was just an incredibly agile mind and a fantastic individual. And he would come to class, preferably 15 or 20 minutes before the hour began, and he would get very, very upset. There was a class in the room preceding that he couldn't go in early and he would get positively annoyed if that class didn't immediately empty out as soon as that ten minute bell rang, because he had an incredible amount of things to put on the board. He would cover every blackboard with bibliography, words...just words...some in English, some not in English, every blackboard and it was total disaster if you couldn't get in there as quickly as Engerrand and write as fast as Engerrand, because those were going to be the key things in the lecture. Gosh, he would just frantically get in there and write like mad. Then he would erase it at the end of the class and you were frantic—and he talked so fast, you didn't have a chance to look up and jot down these things during the course of the lecture. And he would ask questions. You just can't imagine.

He had maps in his office that he had drawn out. He was quite interested in what now would be considered very old-fashioned physical anthropology. But things like eye color, hair form, ear form, nose form, skin color, just on and on. You would get this in enormous detail including maps of Europe

plotting all of these things. And he expected you to know it. We had one exam question, for example: Starting at the Kula Peninsula trace all changes in eye and hair color going around to the Baltic Sea. That was a typical George Engerrand question. 'Oh, my God, where is the Kula Peninsula?' [Chuckle.] You would say, 'I have studied this map, what else could he possibly ask?' Well, I remember his course on Mexico. He would say to name the smallest and the largest state in Mexico. And you think, 'Oh, my God.' I could plot every one on the map, but I never thought to look at the size. Or he would say to name all the states around Durango. And you won't have a map looking at you. You have to conjure this image. Oh, he could ask it so many ways and it was always this detailed. I remember studying for his Europe course. Well, I made up a list of over 2000 things. Well, he would merely say to learn the geography of Europe. That is all he would say. Or he would say, 'I have got some maps in my class you must copy and learn.'

I remember one student that hadn't had him before raised his hand in kind of bewilderment and he said, 'But, Dr. Engerrand, what do you mean to learn the map of Europe?' And Dr. Engerrand, I think in sincere amazement, looked at the student and said, 'well, I mean the mountains, the rivers, the cities, the provinces' and he kept going on and on. He said, 'Well, it is like living in a 12 room house and knowing only one room. You Americans are so bad.'

Engerrand was mainly just a teacher, but he had done some research and he did a wee bit in Texas archeology. For instance, he accompanied Pearce on some of Pearce's early



Dr. George Engerrand and one of his maps, 1949. Department of Anthropology, The University of Texas at Austin, #61.

reconnaissance. He came to the University in about 1916 or 1917, something like that. All the first notes that we have on the Davis site are from the trip Engerrand and Pearce took in 1918 or 1919.”

### EDWARD B. JELKS

After getting out of the Navy in 1957, Jack Hughes helped me get a job with the River Basin Surveys team working under Ed Jelks in the McGee Bend Reservoir [Lake Sam Rayburn] in East Texas (Jelks 1965). When we arrived on the first site, Ed handed me a hatchet, a roll of hail-screen, and a handful of nails and said “go out into the woods and build screens.” That may have been the biggest challenge I ever faced in archeology. From Ed, I learned basic field techniques, picking a guitar, singing Greensleeves, use of a transit, use of a graflex camera, and axioms like “when you think you are at the bottom...dig deeper,” and “the good stuff is always under the biggest backdirt pile.” More importantly, he taught me that we were studying people and not just recovering artifacts.

Interview with Edward B. Jelks by Curtis Tunnell, done in November 1979.

### Background

“I was born in Macon, Georgia and moved to Valley Mills, Texas in 1930, when I was seven years old. I spent the 1930s, the years of the great depression, growing up in Valley Mills. Like most of the kids in Valley Mills, I had a cigar box with a dozen or so arrowheads in it that I picked up here and there. I was aware that there were prehistoric sites around. There was a character in Valley Mills at the time by the name of Jesse James Howard and he was an assiduous collector of Indian relics, and he had done considerable digging in rockshelters in that vicinity. Jesse would take a skeleton that he found and artifacts and put it on display in the store windows of the town. He got a geology degree from the University of Texas, and while there he worked at the Texas Memorial Museum where he put some of his collection on exhibit.

I moved to Austin and started at the University in 1939. I started off in pre-med and when World War II started, I joined the Navy and spent the better part of four years as a hospital

corpsman. I decided I didn’t want to be a physician, and came back to the University in the spring of 1945. I got a bachelors degree in English with a minor in anthropology and then got a masters degree in anthropology. As soon as I got my M.A. degree in the fall of 1949, Bob Stephenson hired me as his assistant in the River Basin Surveys office.”

### River Basin Surveys

“The River Basin Surveys office was started in Austin in 1946. They had the big office in Lincoln, Nebraska, and they opened up one on the Northwest coast, which Joel Shiner was in charge of for a while. Then they opened the one up in Texas which Joe Ben Wheat directed. Joe Ben stayed here for a short while and did the work over at Addicks reservoir near Houston. I believe that was in 1946 or 1947 and then Joe Ben went on to greener pastures and Bob Stephenson replaced Joe Ben. I know Bob was here in 1948. He had done several surveys at Whitney, Texarkana, Grapevine, Garza Little-Elm, [and] Lavon; several reservoirs over the state, and the office was specifically created to work behind dams.

The money, as I understand it, came to the Department of Interior for this salvage work and the Smithsonian had a cooperative agreement with the National Park Service. The Smithsonian would set up field offices and provide the professional staff to do the river basin salvage work.

In 1949, Stephenson had a very miniscule budget. He didn’t even have a federal automobile. He used his own car. He had no money for per diem. He just camped out and cooked. That was the way it was back in those days with virtually no money to travel on.

For the first time that fall [1949], Congress appropriated something like \$50,000 or \$60,000 for the coming fiscal year, which was a good sum of money in those days. And so Bob hired me as his assistant and that was how I got started off professionally doing archeology in the state [see Jelks 1998].

When Bob left in 1951, then I took over running the office and we dealt directly with Washington. Frank Roberts was the head of the RBS and so I reported directly to him. It was kind of nice having your boss in Washington when you lived in Austin.”

### Lake Whitney Project

“The first work that I did with the survey was at Whitney and there were several rockshelters up there. There was Pictograph Cave, Buzzard Cave, and Sheep Cave—the three rockshelters that we worked at mainly. I believe that all of those shelters are still above the water level of the lake. We did not completely excavate any of them. Sheep Cave was a large one. In addition to the three rockshelters, we worked at what was called the old Towash Village, which was a historic Indian village on the banks of the Brazos near the old town of Towash. The town sprang up in the 19th century at a major crossing of the Chisholm trail across the Brazos. The work we did later convinced me and I think others including Dee Ann that this so called Towash Village was really the Quiscat village of the Tawakonis which was visited by De Mezieres in the 1770s. That site is now under the deepest part of the lake. The other site that we worked at was something called the Steele site, which was also down on the banks of the river in the bottoms. It was an open site with Archaic type stuff [see Stephenson 1970].

While we were working at Whitney, we hired a number of local people and I was Stephenson’s assistant up there in 1950. We hired local labor and among the people that we hired was Ed Moorman who lived nearby, and also a retired school teacher at Moody, Ginger Miller. Both Moorman and Miller stayed on and worked with us until 1954, for four years. Mr. Miller was 65 when we hired him and he was a good field hand. He stayed right in there and worked with the younger men. I say men because we had no women at all on any of the field expeditions back in those days.

We worked at those sites from maybe March until July of ’50. And that was all the money and time that we had for that vast reservoir. This was before the days of statistical sampling in archeology. We just went at it hit or miss. Stephenson had recorded over a hundred sites. After the lake was built, some of those sites were later excavated, but that is all that we got before the lake was finished and many of them were flooded out. By today’s standards, it was a pitiful effort. But that was all the money and time that there was.”

### Wylie Focus Pits

“That July, we moved the shovel hands we hired at Whitney, up to work on the Lavon reservoir. We worked at the Hogge Bridge site [Stephenson 1952]. As I recall, that is the only site that we worked that summer [1950]. It was one of those big old basin-shaped depressions of the so called Wylie focus.

In 1951, that winter, Stephenson left to go back to graduate school at the University of Michigan where he subsequently got his Ph.D. And I inherited the office that Joe Ben had started first, and Stephenson was second and me third. So, I had a sort of regular staff here in Austin of Miller and Moorman, both of whom moved down, plus a secretary. In 1951, we went back to Lavon and worked at a couple more sites there. That was the first time I had ever used machinery. I could see that our money and time was limited and the dam was going to be completed and the lake filled up and these sites were going under water. If we had tried to dig by hand as we did at the Hogge Bridge site, I figured we couldn’t get very much done. So, for better or for worse, I employed a bulldozer and used that at two or three of these sites to put a big trench across the pit and get a profile of it. We ran into some burials and tore up a few of them in doing it. At any rate, we did not do too much damage because we watched closely and when we hit bones, we would stop.

What we had done at the Hogge Bridge site was to clean out down to the living surface of the pit. I think probably pretty accurately. You could tell where the bottom of the undisturbed soil was. It appeared that they had dug out this big old hollow and piled the dirt up in a big ring mound all around the edges of it and there was a bunch of burials in that mound. It was a donut-shaped mound, and most of the burials were up in there. They were localized.

There was part of a skeleton that appeared to have been buried down in the pit at Hogge Bridge and some pieces of skull down in that pit. But as I remember, there were no features down in the pit and no complete burials.

We dug at two more sites in 1951, I believe. We cut trenches across them and tested them. We did get a profile through the site, which we couldn’t have done if we had dug it all by hand. We got some more burials and there were burials down in the pit fill in one or two of them. We

also dug in the midden areas around the pits and got some artifacts.

Those sites looked pretty pure. That is, there seemed to be little mixture and they had little bone pins, stone tools and pottery that is typologically very consistent from one site to another. They gave the appearance of not having been occupied too long.

The ring mounds around the pits were obviously used for burying people, so in a sense, they were burial features, but also there was a lot of midden material scattered all around. Very strange! People have suggested the pits were everything from little ponds to catch water, to some sort of an arena for holding dances or ceremonies. I don't know. I have never thought of anything, or had anybody suggest any use, that I thought was a real good explanation.

We worked there at Lavon for a while in 1951 and then we went up and worked at Lake Dallas and a little bit at Garza-Little Elm. We didn't have very much time and all we did was dig a few pits on several sites. We got a sample of artifacts and figured out there were no major midden accumulations."

### Falcon Reservoir

"To continue with the Falcon project, it must have been the winter of 1952 when we were down there. We were surveying areas that had not yet been checked and were digging at several sites, some prehistoric sites and some historic sites. We didn't have much money or very much time. Alex Krieger had an awful lot of data from several years work that he and Jack



Falcon Reservoir, Ed Jelks at gunport in wall.

Hughes and Joe Cason and Don Hartle had put in there [see Krieger and Hughes 1950; Cason 1952]. I remember that around the archeology lab, somewhere in old Pearce Hall on campus, there were a number of large cabinets that were full of Falcon stuff, and Krieger had put together a lot of pots and things. I think they were historic sites mainly. He was pretty well into a report at the time he left, and I am disappointed that he never got that completed. I had the idea that he took a lot of that stuff with him when he went to California. Certainly, he took his notes because he was going to finish the report.

We never published the work that we did, although it should be somewhere with the artifacts and field notes. One reason being, that Alex was about to come out with his publication, he thought. Alex had a fantastic publication record. He put out that North Texas chronology [Krieger 1946] which was massive, and the Davis site report [Newell and Krieger 1949]. He was publishing all over the place like crazy until he left here which was in 1955. He was one of the best known archeologists in the country who went to all the meetings and gave talks. He had a tremendous reputation."

### Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society Handbook.

"Dee Ann showed up here at the University as an undergraduate student having gone a year to North Texas State University at Denton. It must have been 1952 or 1953. She showed up as a student and I was at Little Campus. Dee Ann applied for a job and so I hired her and that is how I became acquainted with her. Dee Ann needed to write a term paper for Campbell's course on Texas Archaeology, and she talked to me about it and I suggested that she comb the literature. Things were in a mess. No one had ever just gone through the literature on Texas archeology, which even in those days was rather voluminous. So, I suggested that she just go through all of this to draw together in one place and outline what the cultural classifications were, and compile at least a general list of traits that were thought to go with each one of these...based strictly on published material.

So, she started doing that and it turned out to be a bigger job than either she or I

had anticipated, but she wasn't going to give up on it. So this damn manuscript kept growing and growing. The original manuscript summarized things pretty well. She also made a big chart which used to hang on the wall over at the Little Campus lab for years. It was a great big old piece of poster board maybe four feet square and she took each one of these cultures, like the Austin focus and underneath that, she would list the traits, the different types of artifacts that occur, the temporal period and whatever else was known about it. She would put all that in the chart and then she had a description in her papers of each one of these things.

That is the way it got started and so then Tom Campbell, who was the editor of the TAS bulletin that year, suggested that Dee Ann amplify that and they would run it as a whole issue in the TAS bulletin. Dee Ann consulted with me on it and she asked me if I would collaborate with her and I said I would. So, we started working on it and we worked months putting all this together. At this time, we were not thinking of putting in a typology section.

Well, Alex was always hanging around the lab and he saw what we were doing and so he got interested in it and he was a very valuable advisor. So, pretty soon, he also got involved into it. Alex ended up as the third collaborator. It just sort of started growing and then Alex suggested that 'hell, let's put all this typology section in there.' So, we started working on that and it just kept growing and growing.

In 1953, I guess it was, they switched the administration of this office from the Smithsonian over to the National Park Service. So, I became employed by the National Park Service in 1953, and was shipped over to Virginia in the fall of 1954. Two years later, in the early fall of 1956, they reactivated the office here. Then I returned to take over running the office here for the Park Service. I was right in the middle of this handbook thing with Dee Ann and Alex when I was shipped off to Virginia. So, I just pulled out on it and they completed it."

#### McGee Bend and the Jonas Short Site

"I got back here in 1956, and reopened that RBS [River Basins Surveys] office. We had a major project coming up at McGee Bend [Lake Sam Rayburn]. In the fall of 1956 we started

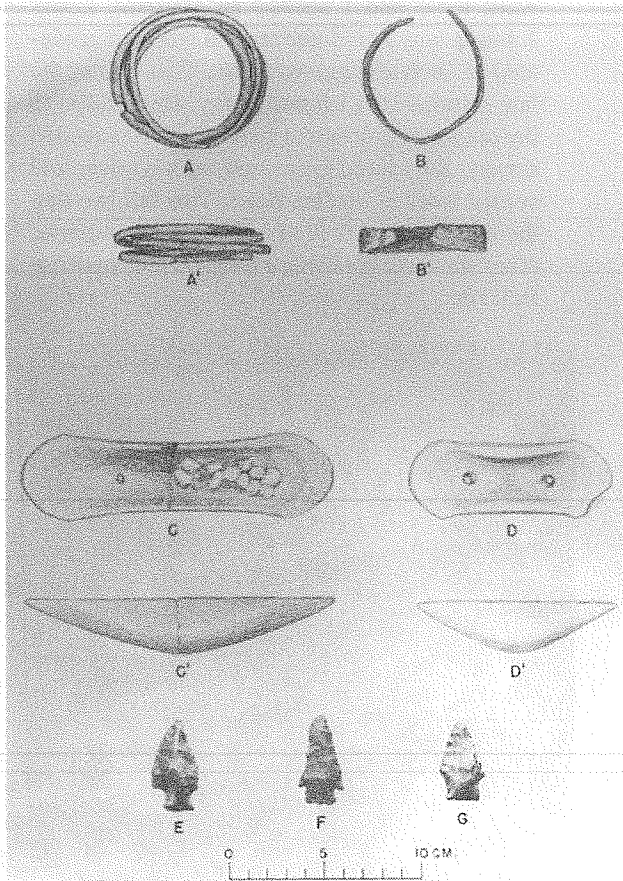
work there and I needed an assistant. Leroy Johnson was a graduate student who had graduated at Tech and moved down. That was in the late summer that I found Leroy. He decided to lay out for a semester or two because he needed money. So, I hired Leroy and we went over and started work at McGee Bend. That fall, we dug the Jonas Short site [41SA101] and a number of other sites like the Walter Bell site and the Print Bell site.



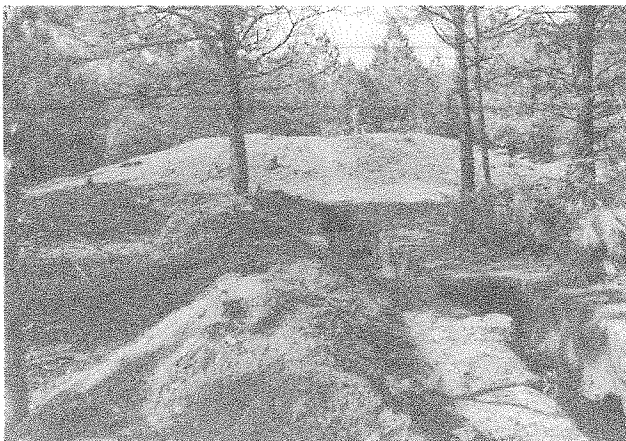
Kelly Lathan in Jonas Short Mound excavations. TARL Photograph 41SA101-19.

The Jonas Short site was an anomalous kind of thing to find in the middle of the Caddoan area [Jelks 1965]. To find a mound that early, with early Woodland kinds of fancy artifacts. The mound was about a 100 feet in diameter at the base and it stood, I believe, maybe eight feet above grade. There was a sub-mound pit as it turned out. So, to have excavated the whole mound completely, it would have meant a pile of dirt a hundred feet across and at an average depth of up to six or seven feet. That is a lot of dirt. We had a small crew and didn't have very much time or very much money. We dug two trenches in toward the middle at right angles to start off with, and then we developed that so we were working on alternate quarters of the mound. We left two quarters, opposite one another, completely unexcavated. Our initial plan was that we hoped to take out the other two quarters. But a lot of that dirt was real tough and you couldn't dig it with a trowel.





Artifacts from Jonas Short Mound, San Augustine County, Texas. TARL Photograph 41SA101-34.



Jonas Short Mound. TARL Photograph 41SA101-4.

We had to use picks on it. And so it ended up that we did not even dig out all of the first two quarters. I would say that we excavated a total of, maybe 25 or 30 percent of the actual bulk of the mound.

There were a number of artifact caches and this was typical of Woodland stuff on up in the Midwest. The caches were up in the mound itself. I think there probably had been burials with the caches, but they had deteriorated. I would suppose that there were two main structural members of the mound. There was this heavy cap of clayey soil on the top. It was so hard we had to use picks. When we got more than halfway down, there was a distinct layer which was silty and that was sitting on the sub-mound feature. It looked like they put the tomb in the bottom, and we could see no grave pits at all, although we looked very, very carefully. We could find no evidence of pits around the caches in the mound itself. So, it looks like they laid bodies or at least artifact caches and then piled dirt on top of them. I think this same situation is found in Woodland mounds up in the Midwest. Some think that they were adding to the mounds periodically. Others say that they built it more or less in one event, but they put stuff up in the mound. If you were burying the chief big honcho down at the bottom, then you might place retainers in the mound fill as you build it up. But that wasn't clear.

We didn't get any pottery vessels out of this mound. There were potsherds in the mound fill, but that is one of the puzzling aspects of the whole thing. Some of this was bone-tempered, and it was well down in the mound fill, and as far as we could see it was not intrusive, and it looked Caddoan—like that Caddoan stuff at McGee Bend.

There was occupation material all around the mound. We simply weren't able and didn't have time to get much testing done. We ran trenches across but found no features. No evidence of houses. We found one burial way out from the mound which I believe had some Perdiz or Bassett points with it, which clearly was not related to the mound itself. We did find some pottery which was similar to the pottery which came out of the mound fill. But according to our chronology it should date much later than this mound. Maybe this Woodland stuff dates a little later than it does up in the Midwest. Jimmy Griffin looked at the stuff and based on the artifacts, said they were dated around 0 A.D. or at the latest A.D. 300, but our radiocarbon dates, we only had two as I remember, one was right on for Griffin at 0 A.D. and the other was somewhat later, maybe A.D. 900. So, I don't know."

## Lewisville Site

"Well, it was in 1951, when we were working up at Lavon and Lewisville and Lake Dallas. Ted White, who was a vertebrate paleontologist employed by the Smithsonian, was going around to some of the places that archeologists were working over the country and checking for fossil locations. So, he came up there and he was going around and finding a lot of fossils. He was up there at the same time that we were conducting our archeological digging.

So, the engineers had dug a big excavation right behind the dam. When they dug that big hole, which was 20 or 25 feet deep, White looked at it and there were a whole bunch of fossils found in it. There were some gigantic turtles, horses and I think camels, dire wolves perhaps and certainly there were glyptodons.

So, White was collecting some of these fossils one day down in the bottom of this deep trench and he looked up on the embankment which sloped up at a very steep angle, 45 degrees or something like that, and noticed two or three burned spots. He went up and checked them. He thought they might be hearths and they were well down in the second terrace of the Trinity [River]. And the fossils he was getting, he was estimating at something like 40,000 or 50,000 years of age. So, he told me about them and I went out to look at them.

I may have gone out there once by myself or with Ted White, but I didn't feel confident to evaluate the situation geologically. So, I got in touch with Glen Evans and he and Ted and I went out and examined the hearths. We scraped them off and took some photographs. I still have copies of some of the photographs. I think we tried profiling one and digging in it a little to see what was there.

We found no artifacts, no flint flakes, no nothing. At the same time, of course, we were discussing all of this and Glen, who was familiar with that type of geology, was quite puzzled by them and so was Ted White. They both agreed that they had never seen anything just like this. They had both seen burned spots in ancient geological deposits which were apparently pre-human but they didn't look like this and these seemed inexplicable. We talked about the possibility that they were burnt tree stumps but they had all these bones in them, all busted up and fractured bones, and the bones were

burnt all to hell obviously in some kind of fire and it was hard to understand how the fractured bones got there if these were just tree stumps that had burnt out. Another curious thing is that they were not all at the same level. They were at different levels and they were, as I remember, three of them visible at that time.

Anyhow, we were puzzled by them. As we dug into them, eventually we saw a little chute going off to one side which we thought probably was a tree root and so we felt pretty well satisfied. I was relying largely on Glen's judgment at that time, because since there were no artifacts or anything, I thought it might have been a naturally burned spot. When Glen and Ted saw the root going off, they were pretty firmly convinced that these were old burned-out tree stumps. I was not so sure, but I was inexperienced and I wasn't going to disagree with them, and I didn't have any point to argue with them. Somehow, it just didn't look to me like a damn tree stump. For one thing, the burned spots were all big. They were maybe five, six, seven, or eight feet across, but they were pretty thin, just about one foot thick. I thought that if it were a tree stump, it would go down deeper [see Heizer and Brooks 1965].

I collected the burned bone and stuff and brought it back to Austin, but I don't know what happened to it. That was left over at Little Campus and is probably all long gone. I was sort of fascinated by the burned areas, so I told King Harris and Bill Crook about them because I knew they went out hunting for sites in that general area. This was in 1952. I told King and Bill about the things, and they obviously looked at them once or twice, but didn't pay them too much mind. But they remembered they were there. Then, I went to Virginia. While I was gone to Virginia, I heard from somebody, Alex or Dee Ann wrote me, that a whole bunch of these things had eroded out. They were still working on the dam and the lake hadn't filled up yet. And so, Alex Krieger and old Dr. Sellards and a number of people went up there. They went out and dug in some of the burned spots and it is my understanding that Alex and Sellards were both convinced they were man-made hearths.

Before that time, I think that King and Bill went out there and did some digging in them and they collected some samples of burnt bones. But then one day, they were out there digging and they found a Clovis point. I think they must

have found that point just before Alex and everybody went up there.

Experienced archeologists went up and dug in the things and the general consensus was that they were man-made and there were great big chunks of charcoal definitely in there. They ran several dates from several hearths and they were all too early for their carbon dating machine to date—in excess of 35,000 or 40,000 years [Crook and Harris 1957, 1961]. Then, the lake filled up and that was the end of the thing.

Now, when I came back in 1956, King was telling me about this and he said that his wife Inus Marie actually found that Clovis point. And the circumstances were, as King told me the story and I am certain that my memory is accurate about it—that they went out there one Sunday morning to dig around in the hearth and took Inus Marie, who had just started going out with King on these things. They put Inus Marie down to dig in this hearth and then Bill and King went out to look to see if any more hearths had been exposed, and they were out wandering some distance from this place. When they came back, Inus Marie had found the Clovis point and she had picked it up. She had dug all the overburden off and had picked up the point. So, the only person who observed how that point was in there was Inus Marie and, of course, she was inexperienced. When King and Bill Crook got back, the place that the point had been laying was clear and they could see just where it came from. Still all the overburden was gone.

Another story that came to me, maybe Bill Crook told me this, was that the Saturday of the previous weekend Carl Compton from over at North Texas was taking students out on field trips and collecting from archeological sites. So, the Corp of Engineers man reported to King and Bill that these people had been messing around the hearths and then King told the man to be sure and not let anybody in there messing with the hearths. Well, the following Saturday, the same group of people came back and started down to the hearths and the man went down and chased them off before they could do anything.

That is all I know about the Lewisville hearths, except...I don't know, was it last winter? I get this call from Larry Banks asking me what I knew about the hearths. He said that the lake level had gone down and some of these hearths were exposed. I keep calling them hearths, they may not be that. The burnt spots were exposed. So, I went down there and Dee Ann was there.

Bob Bell came down from Oklahoma and took one look at them and said 'I never saw a hearth that looked like that' and turned around and left. Bill Crook didn't come. King couldn't come. But, there was a group of people who went out there. Then, after we looked at them, we all went and sat down and discussed it and we all agreed that those things were sitting there and they ought to be studied to determine whether or not they are hearths. Maybe this could be verified. And we all made suggestions as to how they might be dug and how they should have been done in the first place. Larry got Dennis Stanford from the Smithsonian to come down. Larry called me a couple of weeks later saying that they had found some bone that Stanford was convinced had been broken by people because of the spiral fracture. Then, somewhere later, I heard the lignite story. But, I don't think, from what I heard of descriptions of the burned wood—that wasn't lignite.

Well, there was another incident in the 1950s. They had this meeting of the TAS in Dallas and we went up there for a field trip. This must have been in 1953 or 1954. This was before they found the Clovis point, so it had to have been maybe 1953. So, Crook and Harris discovered this beautiful hearth, all full of wood and everything and you could see the outline of the hearth. There was no question as to whether it was a man-made hearth. There was nothing else that it could be. So, they were all excited about it and it was in the lower Schuler formation. So, they arranged a field trip and took all the TAS. So everybody went out there and Bill was giving this lecture on the geological formations and here is the fire pit and it is all in place and everything. But it concerned me because it was on the other side of this big old cut and it didn't look to me at all like those burned spots on the other side. It was in real soft sand for one thing. But he was showing it and I wasn't going to argue with him. So, after he got through with his talk, Jack Hughes and I went off looking for fossils. I told Jack that I didn't know what that hearth was that Bill was looking at, but it didn't look to me at all like the same thing as the ones on the other side of the cut. Jack and I came back in maybe an hour, having picked up a bunch of fossils, and some of the members had started digging in this hearth under Bill's direction. They dug in there and found a Coke bottle or tin can or something. [Chuckle.] It was a cold winter, and the workmen built fires and they

had dug out a place in the bank and built a fire in it. And made coffee and kept warm. It got covered up and it was sealed in there.

I am doubly disappointed that they have had two shots at that site now, after the Clovis point was found in the thing. I am disappointed. It is still strange—that vast quantity of bones that Bill Crook and King Harris took out of those things all burnt and with caliche formed all over them. Some of them appeared to perhaps have scratches on them from butchering, but there were bones of all these different animals all mixed up. There was a camel vertebrae and foot bones out of a buffalo, all burnt. It was just crazy! It is still an enigma! I have heard no reasonable explanation as to how the things could have gotten there naturally on the one hand and I can't think of any way. On the other hand, they are certainly atypical of habitation. There are no flint flakes or if there are, there are very few. If they were making wooden or bone tools maybe they didn't use any stone to speak of when they were camping there, which, I guess, is barely possible. But, anyway it is a real mystery."

#### DR. E. MOTT DAVIS

In the fall of 1957, I had been hired by Ed Jelks on an archeological crew working in McGee Bend Reservoir. At sometime during that season, we learned that E. Mott Davis, then new to Texas, was coming by for a visit. I had never known anyone who used a first initial and middle name, and besides that he had a degree from Harvard! I was half scared to death when he came onto the site with his New England accent and formal manners. But that evening in our old camp house, he took out a taterbug mandolin and a guitar in an old beat-up case, and I knew he was just one of us boys. We spent the evening playing and singing "O Mister Moon Man," "Wild Woodflower," and "Sinking of the Titanic." In coming years, Mott would teach me all the words to "Springfield Mountain." I learned many things from Mott, not the least of which was how to clean, oil, and repack a double-edge razorblade, so it could be reused a dozen times. Mott and I have always had a running joke about our roots. He is quick to tease me about being from Turkey, Texas, and I always mispronounce "Massatwoshits."

An interview of E. Mott Davis was done on January 4, 1983, in his office at The University of Texas.

#### Starting in Texas Archeology

"In January 1957 I was trying to get started at the Ferrell's Bridge Reservoir up at Lake O' the Pines. But the University didn't have any mechanism for hiring local labor. It all had to be done here in Austin. You had to have physical exams and all that. Well, I'd been up there to Ferrell's Bridge with Bill [W. A.] Davis and Leroy Johnson trying to make arrangements for hiring. I brought Bill all the way back here and put him through the hiring process. That made a big impression on the personnel people, that I had to bring a guy 300 miles to get him appointed to do a project. Finally, I went to the local doctor in Jefferson and he agreed to be a Workmen's Compensation doctor. He had to fill out papers and be appointed. Then anybody I hired there would go and be examined by him. Then there were either five or seven forms that had to be filled out and sent back to Austin. To get paid, I would get on the phone on Wednesday afternoon to the Office of Sponsored Research and give them the payroll. I would have to point out to them, 'look, these are people with no money and they have got to have regular checks.' I remember when I was digging at the McKinney site [41MR12] the next fall, in 1957, I would go into Ore City and the telephone exchange was in a woman's living room. The phone booth was in the corner of the living room, and she would always have some friend of hers in there yakking, you know, and I'd be in the phone booth talking to a guy and they'd of course be listening. That was fine by me because then everyone in town would know that I was fighting to get the money for my guys.

I started digging at the Whelan site [41MR2] in the spring of 1957. It was late January, and I dug until the beginning of April. The timing went fairly well because I ran out of budget about the time it began to rain in the daytime. It rained a lot during that season, but only at night and on weekends. [Chuckle.] Then finally I dismissed the crew except for Bill Davis, and I had a volunteer. That's when it really began raining. Eventually of course the mound went underwater.





E. Mott Davis excavating at the Harroun site (41UR10), ca. 1958. TARL Photograph 41UR10-40.

In the fall of 1957 I was working at the McKinney site. That was a burial site. I was scheduled to go back to Whelan, and it would have been great if I could have, but it was partly underwater. So we were checking out other sites. There was a house way out in the woods with some Black people living there. This woman came out on the porch and sort of stood her ground as I explained, 'Did she know of any Indian places or something.' She said, 'Yes, back under that great big pecan tree there are some men come and they dig there.' She said, 'One of them has a blue pickup.' Well I knew



The "Old Green Goose" stuck in the woods at Ferrell's Bridge Reservoir, 1957. TARL Photograph 29A6-2/161

who that was, Ralph Nicholas, I knew then that I was in good shape. He was a great guy and was interested in what I was doing. Ralph said, 'If you want to dig here, it's your site and that's it! Meanwhile come and record our collections from there.' That was October 1957.

Well, I also found the Harroun site [41UR10; see Jelks and Tunnell 1959] while I was doing this other work. Some farmer said, 'I know a place where there is a mound.' And he described how to get there. Up on top of the hill [above Harroun] there was a big mobile home where a couple of people lived. I went up there and a woman answered, she was very nice, and her name was Dalton. I got to know them. They were Indians from Oklahoma, and they liked to

live away from things. She liked to cruise through the woods with her dogs. Sam Whiteside from Tyler asked us about the mound up at the top of the hill by the road coming out of the bottoms from Harroun. That was right next to the Daltons, so I said to her, 'Did you know that mound was there?' 'Sure, she said, but you're an archeologist, so I thought you'd know about it!' So I dug that site, and that was the Dalton site [41UR11], and it was in a recreation area.

And I dug the Martin site [41UR12], which was an Archaic site [Davis and Davis 1960].

That was in the summer of 1958 that I dug those. I made a field school out of it but I didn't get enough people. I ended up with only two people working for credit. One of them was Jules Gipson."

### **Texas Archeological Society**

"The meeting of the TAS in the fall of 1956 was in Waco. I went out to McGee Bend and Charlie Steen [National Park Service] was visiting there, he was the president of TAS that year. We all went to Waco. I remember in that McGee Bend house [called Grandma's Old House] it was so cold in the morning, I just couldn't bring myself to



get up. Charlie shamed me by bringing me a cup of coffee.

The first paper at TAS was by Frank Watt. Dee Ann had left the state and she was secretary of TAS, Charlie was president and he lived in Santa Fe. I had known about the TAS Bulletin since I was at Harvard. I found this organization was being run, to put it mildly, informally! [Chuckle.] The treasury and everything, it was wild.

There was a paper by old Frank Bryan, the geologist from Groesbeck, who wrote things about Cabeza de Vaca and other things. His paper was on climatic change in the Pleistocene and its importance. Well, he had an awful lot to say, and a limited amount of time to say it, so he delivered this thing at breakneck speed, with gasps of breath in between. He was out to prove that the climatic changes in the Late Pleistocene were all catastrophic. I was saying to myself, 'This man is nutty as a fruitcake!' But in between would be these flashes of insight that were really quite remarkable. One of his proofs was that they found these elephants frozen in ice in Siberia. Everyone knows that an elephant is a tropical animal. So how does he become frozen in the ice? Well, here's this elephant messing around in the grassland, minding his own business, and it's warm, and all of sudden it gets cold. What happens to the elephant? Of course he's going to suffer. What's going to suffer first? His trunk is going to start hurting, and he's going to feel bad. What does an animal do, like an elephant, when they feel bad? They go and lie down in the water, everybody knows that. So the elephant goes and lies down in the water and it freezes solid and there he's preserved! [Chuckle.]

Also, he said man came from the sea. There were two proofs of this. One is the salt content of our blood is about the same as the ocean. Another is that if you look at archeological sites in Texas and the Plains, the nearer you get to the coast the older they get, and he would cite them. It was the darndest thing I ever heard!

Then some old guy got up to give a talk and he was trying to explain how some artifact was used, and he wanted somebody to hold a cord and he would cut it. Cyrus Ray was there and he leapt to his feet and the two of them were struggling with this string up there with their backs to the crowd. [Chuckle.] It was a funny show.

Victor Smith out at Alpine had just died and they were all talking about him, eulogizing

him and all. So I figured he must have been quite a guy.

I gave a paper about what I had been doing in Alberta. I titled it "Archeology Begins in Alberta." Some years later I found out that everybody thought I was a Canadian, with my accent and all. They all thought I was a Canadian. I remember Bill Crook, years later we were chatting about something and he was stunned to find I wasn't a Canadian. [Chuckle.] That was my first TAS meeting, and I was made Editor then.

I decided we needed a newsletter, something that would be more often than that annual bulletin. So in the spring of 1957 I put out a Newsletter. I made it clear in the footnotes all along that this was an irregular newsletter. It was done just with the student help around the department. It would be mimeographed there and out it went. I guess I put out two the first year, and it varied from two to four in years thereafter."

### Site Designation Systems

"Okay, something else comes up now, this is the business about site designation systems. After I was in from Ferrell's Bridge that first year, I said to Ed and to Tom Campbell, 'look, we've got to change to the county system, this makes no sense.' They went into shock. They just assumed, and they got hostile as anything, that we were going [to go] through all the collections and recatalogue them, renumbering every artifact. Well, not only is that impossible, it's a lousy idea. You don't recatalogue. I managed to convince them that it didn't make any sense and it wasn't what I was talking about. We would renumber sites. This would be an occasion to work our way through the files and cut out the sites that shouldn't even have numbers. We would do it county by county, according to how much help we had at any time. At that time I had three 15 hour-a-week students working in the lab. It didn't take much money to do that, and that was the budget of Research in Anthropology, which eventually became the TARL budget.

So we started on Travis County. I remember that one of the students was Brent Hemphkins. I think one of the very first sites they tried to validate was the Cedar Park Midden. One document said it was on one side of the creek, and another said it was on the other side of the

creek. So they brought it in to me, the maps and all, and said, 'Well, where do we put it?' as though I could somehow project its proper placement. They got exasperated and leapt into Brent's car and went out looking for it, and couldn't find it. It was quite a lesson. I devised then an open circle on a map indicating we weren't sure where things were. I know where it is now. It is one of the hugest burned rock middens you ever saw there and people go and dig there every weekend, just destroying it. Tom Campbell remembered that there was some work going on there when he was a student here, and Jim Word who grew up in Austin, knew the site. Jim remembers as a scout going out there on a dig with Roy Bedichek and others on that midden.

So we started through the files with the idea that there are a lot of sites given numbers that didn't deserve it. You look in the list of sites under a county, and there would be such-and-such a number mound reported down this road. That would be it. So the idea was that any site that was worthy of having a folder we would give a county number. I also devised this key site file which would have the cross references between different numbering systems. So I set that all up originally.

We weren't just changing it from the old quadrangle system, there had been a previous system in which sites were numbered CT, ET, and so forth, for Central Texas, East Texas, and so forth. Then the WPA had its own system. So there were a number of different systems, and some sites actually, like the Davis site, had as many as five or six designations for just one site. We tackled those and worked through them. That's how the current system got going."

### Field Work in Northeast Texas

"In the fall of 1957, while I was working at the McKinney site, you and Ed went and dug Harroun [Jelks and Tunnell 1959]. We lived in New Diana, home of the famous quartet. Do you remember the two mandolins and the two guitars? We played, "Oh Mister Moon Man" and "Wildwood Flower," and that's all we knew and that's all we played. We played it over and over again. [Chuckle.]

Then it was the summer of 1958, they were just closing the dam, that I dug the Dalton site and Jake Martin. I sent up two students ahead of

time to lay out a grid on Jake Martin. We needed a name for the site, so I looked at the old land ownership map. The name of a former landowner—it wasn't Martin, it was something else. So they went up there about two days ahead of time to lay out the grid. They began to take notes and they said to each other, 'What did he say that name was?' and they decided it was Martin. [Chuckle.] So by the time I got out there, there were 20-odd pages of notes saying Martin site. Well, it's a fairly common name so I decided we had to give him a first name, and that's how the Jake Martin site got its name. [Chuckle.]

Across the road from the Dalton site there's a great big field with another mound on it, owned by some hardware store people in Ore City named Chasteen. Bob Turner had been through and really checked that place out, with probes and all. We called that the Chasteen site [41UR18, the W. S. Chastain site].

In 1960, you [CT] were with the gang up at Cooper [Cooper Lake]. You were left there one weekend, nobody else was around. You decided to go look at some of the sites along the Red River that were in the Handbook. You went up to Riverby and there it was—it was called Harling Mound, because Harling had cleared it. Beautiful flat-topped mound. Previously it had been forested. Nobody had touched it, and one of the reasons being there was a graveyard on it. They called it the graveyard. If you look in the Handbook, of course they called it the Morgan Mound. King Harris and Krieger, and I don't know who else had gone there, and they were convinced it was a mound. But the local people didn't think it was an Indian mound at all. Some absentee landlords bought the land and had Harling as a manager. He had cleared that mound just before you went up and looked. So I got money from the American Philosophical Society, and you and I and Bob Hoover went up there in the late fall of 1960. It was the first disturbance of that mound.

Of course we had high hopes for that project because the Sanders site is not all that far away. If I had to do it again now, I would dig it with a backhoe. But we did get a lot of digging done [Davis 1962]. I think we showed satisfactorily that the mound was not built in stages, and it didn't have structures in it. It was indeed a graveyard. There were some Black graves, a dog burial, and a few small pits in it. One of them had a metatarsal that was cow or buffalo. I

really wanted to know which of course. I had Ernie Lundelius look at it later and I remember he put on this great act. Without saying anything he took it and went all over it, he went and got bones out of a drawer and compared them, he went and got two publications and compared them. I forget how long this took, not a word in all this time. He finally gave it back to me and said, "It's bison...or cow!" [Chuckle.]

### The Texas Shaking Screens

"This brings up the history of the Texas Shaking Screens. I had seen in *American Antiquity* where Jim Ford had published this description of a mechanized screen that he used at Poverty Point, with an engine and a long drive shaft, and the shaking screen on plywood legs. It was great how it worked. So when I was going to Dalton and Jake Martin, I made one, following those specifications. Jules Gipson worked with me. His job was to get it all set up. It turned out you had to have them exactly lined up with the engine or that machine would buck! Like a bronco! It would leap around in the air! We must have wasted close to a week. One time he started it, and it wasn't quite lined up right and so he moved around to the end of the screen opposite the motor and lifted it up to just move it an inch or two, and it turned out that the shaking had broken the plywood legs. He lifted it up and there were no legs. And he's there holding this vibrating machine and he's shaking all over and yelling, 'Turn it off! Turn it off!' [Chuckle.]

It was in the fall of 1958 that Jerry Epstein was hired and went to Centipede and Damp Caves with you [CT]. The machine went down there with you on that. [We wrestled the gasoline engine down the cliffs and finally got the shaker screen set up on an elaborate stone platform. Although the device worked, we quickly learned that the dry deposit went through the screen in about five seconds, and it wasn't worth starting the engine. So the motorized part was abandoned.]<sup>10</sup>

### TAS Field School

Mott continues:

"The first Texas Archeological Society Field School wasn't until 1962. A bunch of us were

going up to the Vinson Site at Tehuacana. I think maybe King Harris was coming down. I remember going up with Dee Ann, and I used the station wagon that I had for the film project. We nearly froze to death going up there. We got there and it was raining and we couldn't get on the site. Anyway, we were sitting at a cafe in Mexia. Hank Sturgis was one of the people and Ed Jelks, and I don't know who else. The idea was not really a field school, by the way, Ed needed help in his work. He was getting into the Norteño thing, and he wanted to be able to check some sites that weren't in reservoirs. He had been working at the Pearson site [Duffield and Jelks 1961], and he was learning about other sites, including Gilbert. So the idea of having a dig outside of a reservoir in which the TAS would help supply labor and people to get trained, arose at that meal in Mexia. That would have been the fall of 1961. It was the Summer of 1962 when the Gilbert site was dug [Jelks 1967]. Part of the money for that work came out of the River Basin Surveys—money rationalized by the need to do comparative work. It was three weeks long, and different ones of us went up to help.

The second TAS field school was at the Oblate site in 1963 [see Tunnell 1962]. The third one was at the Vinson site at Tehuacana in the summer of 1964 [Smith 1993]; and then at the Gaulding site down by Beaumont in 1965." [The Gaulding site cost participants many quarts of blood due to the voracious mosquitoes.]

### Archeological Films

"In 1962, I was in the middle of my filming stuff. I went up into the Northeast doing filming. The series was called 'Spade Work for History.' The filming was done in 1961 and 1962. In '61 we did the Navajo Reservoir in northwestern New Mexico, and the reservoir on the Snake River in Washington, and work by Bob Stephenson and others up in the Northern Plains. Then in 1962 we did stuff in the Northeast, in Pennsylvania, up in Ohio, and in North Carolina. Then in 1963 we did the Oblate site. The work had all been done at Oblate, but we had several motives in mind. We needed a place for a TAS field school that summer. The second TAS field school was at Oblate, in 1963 [see Bailey 1998:77-80 for a recent discussion of this film series directed by E. Mott Davis].

The Oblate site was a chance for me to do a Texas film. There was an REA [Rural Electrification] line not far away, and Preston Millican worked for the LCRA [Lower Colorado River Authority]. It was arranged to bring power down there so we could do sound recording on the site. That's the only film in the series which we were able to do the sound on the site. And that's been the most used film in the series. It's even used now some. Yes, those were pretty good films!

During the work at Oblate, we had a big tent with electricity and refrigerators too! I think that field school was three weeks long. There was a beautiful swimming place down there on the Guadalupe River. Oh, God, the camping ground and everything was great. The big cypress trees. I remember that last night when we sang [Sinking of the Titanic] to the full moon and then Norma Hoffrichter's daughters and their ukeleles...Oh, gosh, that was just so great. [During the evening swimming session, we heard Mott's youngest son, Hugh about 5 years old, scream. We all looked up and he was standing proudly on a high rock peeing in a giant golden arc down into the pool.]

But, that was when the last filming was done and the series was released the following year. That really was one thing that kind of stopped my fieldwork. Half of my pay for the better part of two years was paid out of that project. That was a National Science Foundation grant, plus a supplementary grant from National Educational Television. The total budget was \$120,000 for six films, which they said was absolute shoestring.

This was one way we got things moving in the beginnings of TARL. We moved to Balcones from Little Campus, and it was a fairly impressive move around 1962. Space became available out there, where the "chicken-cage" is now. We got word that it was empty. It happened, this was in the summer and building and grounds had trucks available right then. The whole thing was done all at once. Boy, did it make an impression on Niles Thompson and the people out there. [Chuckle.] Initially we got money from the museum, from Ed Jelks' budget, and from Research in Anthropology, which would pay for a halftime student year-round. We started inventorying Little Campus. Among other things, we were photographing and getting rid of a lot of the grinding stones, you know there were hundreds, and thousands of them. We

struggled so hard for money for what we were doing in archeology!

I walked in one day and said to Ed, 'I just got a \$90,000 grant to make films.' [Chuckle.] The reaction was almost hostile! But I was able to parlay me a half-time secretary which eventually became a permanent University job, and eventually became Terry Lizicki, you see.

The first guy who helped on those films was Shields Mitchell, who had been a photographer for General Dynamics, and he was awfully good. But he quit after about a year and Earl Miller took over. So Earl did much of it."

### Radiocarbon Dating Lab

"Okay, now to the Radiocarbon Lab...Before I ever came here, and I came in 1956, around 1951 or '52, Libby had been successful in designing a radiocarbon dating thing. It was a box you could buy for \$1,500 bucks. Before any of them got delivered they began the big atomic bomb tests that wiped it out entirely. It was widely felt that it was probably the end of radiocarbon dating.

Then they started doing proportional gas counting, which started in Saskatchewan and a few other places, and found that this could work. Meanwhile, Alex [Krieger] had gotten all steamed up about radiocarbon dating. He and a man in chemistry, Leon Morgan, got to talking about it and decided to see if they couldn't make a radiocarbon lab here. They got a little money appropriated to Research in Anthropology and they built a shield and stuff in the chemistry building, and they hired a student. But it was still very much on a shoestring, and at that point, Krieger left Texas.

Then sometime in 1957, probably the summer, I'd been in the field, and Tom Campbell said, 'Well, look there is this radiocarbon lab thing. We'd like to keep it going, and put you in charge.' Well, frankly, I didn't want to do it. I had only one year of chemistry and one year of physics in high school in the early 1930s. I was supposed to be doing archeology! [Chuckle.] 'Well, look, we'll make a committee with Morgan and the others and you'll have their advice.' In other words, I was told that this was what I had to do.

Well, there never was really enough money, and we stumbled along. In the spring of 1958, a room was made available in the Vertebrate

Paleontology lab. We had all this instrumentation, which was all jury-rigged stuff, scrounged from everywhere. At one point, I remember going to Harry Ransom, who was then Dean of Liberal Arts. I said, 'Without more money I cannot produce dates.' He said, 'Unless you show me you can produce dates, we cannot give you any more money.' [Chuckle.]

We had an undergraduate geology student who had been a sergeant in the Marines, and another guy who'd been an electronics guy in the Navy. They were saying, 'Look, with this instrumentation there's no way we can produce a valid date.' I got to thinking, 'Okay, he wants dates, he'll get dates.' Maybe they won't mean a darn thing, but they'll be figures. So we did get dates!

There was a young guy in chemistry recently out of Yale, Murray Tamers, who had an idea for dating by liquid assimilation. I got some money through Research in Anthropology, to help him on that. Eventually that's what we did, we were working on methane but we ended up with liquid assimilation. This was 1960.

Texas A&M was still very much of a cow-college except in oceanography. They were big in oceanography. Ernie Lundelius found out there was some grad student working on a radiocarbon lab over there to date seawater. So we went over there. I forget right now which step was which, because there were two crucial steps in the dating process. One was this thing that generated all the heat and fire, and the other one was the going from acetylene to benzene. One process we had licked and the other one they had licked. We realized that between us it looked like we had it. Well, Tamers left not long after that, but our technicians and theirs wore grooves in the highway between here and College Station. They had the counting stuff, and we had the chemistry. I would say this lab has now put out some five thousand dates."

### Work in Yugoslavia

"Jim Wiesman came as a classical archeologist in the classics department in the late 1950s. He is an absolute dynamo. If he were in business he would be a multi-millionaire. He is a brilliant scholar. On his initiative, we set up a chapter of the Archaeological Institute of America here, which is still going strong. So he was going to set up an archeological establish-

ment here to do his work. He put a proposal in to Norman Hackerman proposing, among other things, establishment of an archeological lab. Hackerman sent it back and one of his marginal comments was 'Don't we already have an archeological laboratory?' [Chuckle.] There was Fred Matson of Penn State, the famous ceramist, who Jim Weisman brought in. Fred said, 'I'd sure like to see the archeological lab you have,' because he knew of our lab. One day Weisman called me and said, 'Do we have an archeological lab?' [Chuckle.]

Well, this resulted in Weisman and I getting to know each other well, and Weisman decided there ought to be a major in archeology. So he created a committee of me and himself and Marion Davis, who was a professor of art history. Eventually, we got an Archeological Studies major. Shortly after that Weisman left and went to Boston University, and I've been in charge of that ever since. When Weisman got a second project going with the Yugoslavs, they wanted him to come and work on this site called Stojbe in southern Yugoslavia. The first work there was in 1970. He asked me if I would be interested in going. [Chuckle.] Oh, boy!! I'd never been overseas even. I was then fifty-something years old. So that is how I got to go to Yugoslavia. I worked there for six seasons."

### • LEROY JOHNSON, JR. •

LeRoy, or Uncle Lee as he is now known, is one of the most intelligent and interesting people I have known. We worked together on field crews at McGee Bend [Lake Sam Rayburn] and Ferrell's Bridge



LeRoy Johnson cleaning profiles at the Whelan site, 1957. TARL Photograph 29A6-2/6.



[Lake O' the Pines] reservoirs, and were roommates at Little Campus in graduate school at UT.

LeRoy Johnson supervised during the late 1950s one of two great terrace excavation projects at Amistad Reservoir, at the Devil's Mouth site (41VV188) located at the disembogment of the Devils River into the Rio Grande. Silt deposition during great floods of antiquity accumulated to many meters in depth, and this was layered with important strata of occupational debris. The terrace was occupied intermittingly from Late Prehistoric times back to the terminal Pleistocene. Ancient projectile points and fragments of mammoth bones

were found in gravel deposits at the base of the deeply stratified silt (see Johnson 1964).

LeRoy was good at everything from fieldwork, research, and writing, to mandolin picking, singing, and foreign languages. His attention span was always short, and what was a prized possession today would be casually given to a friend or left behind in an old house tomorrow. Once while fixing a spaghetti meal for us, he had nothing to strain the spaghetti out of the boiling water, so he grabbed a tennis racquet and poured the boiling spaghetti through it. Needless to say, the "cat-gut" strings melted into the spaghetti and the whole mess went into the sink...but we ate it anyway. One day I found his favorite handmade boots in the trash can.

He was out of his cowboy period! So I wore them for years.

He once left a Civil War sword sticking firmly into a pine tree back in the Piney Woods of East Texas. LeRoy got great joy out of playing his 1918 Victrola, after finally locating an ancient repairman to fix the broken spring. But true to form, one day he announced that it had been given to an acquaintance. As a meticulous researcher, excellent writer, and technical editor, LeRoy has no peer.

**Jonas Short Site**

Lee begins:

"Chickie, chickie, my caney crow

Went to the well to wash his toe

When he got back one of his black-eyed chickens was gone

What time is it Old Witch?

One o'clock, dance and dance and dance about the bed

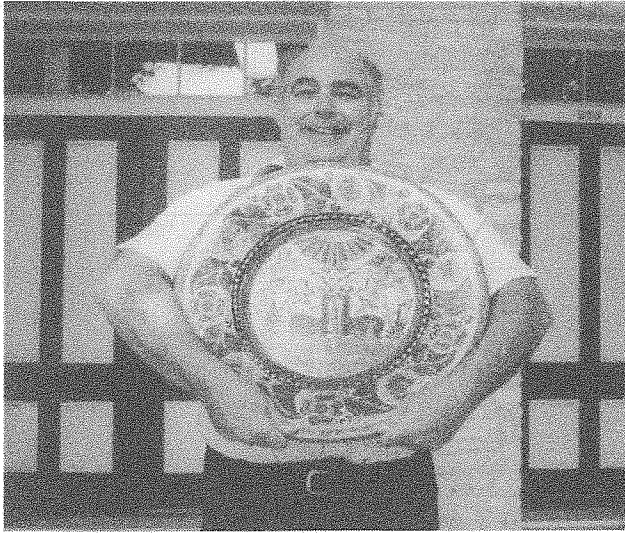
Take an axe and cut off his head!

Chickie, chickie, my caney crow

Ur ur ur ur urh!"



Devil's Mouth Site, Diablo Reservoir. Lee Johnson in hat, and Parker Nunley at wheelbarrow.



LeRoy Johnson and his Tonalá plate, 1982. Photograph by the author.

"I learned that from those Crowder girls that lived across from my grandfather's place.

Ed Jelks hired me on the McGee Bend Project. We first went out there, I suppose it was September or October of 1956, pulled into Jasper, Texas. I'd never been to the Big Thicket before. I thought it was like going back through a time warp. We stayed at the Jasper Hotel at first, a two-story big hotel. I remember walking around in the hotel room we rented looking for an exit sign in case there was a fire...looking for a fire escape. There was none! Their fire escape equipment included only a large coiled rope under the window, fastened to a great big brass ring in the wall. That was the fire escape. Luckily we never needed it.

The most interesting site we ended up working on was the Jonas Short site [41SA101; see Jelks 1965]. It was a large burial mound with a borrow trench around it, in San Augustine County. We hired a local crew and the interviewing process was most peculiar. One of the fellows who showed up had a wooden leg. I don't mean an artificial leg carved out of wood, I mean a peg leg, as you think of pirates. Ed Jelks felt very bad at not being able to hire him, but he said, 'Look, you walk around in an archeological trench with that thing you're going to make little post holes everywhere. It just won't do.' So sadly we had to turn the fellow away.

We ended up with some interesting employees. But some of them were so superstitious and

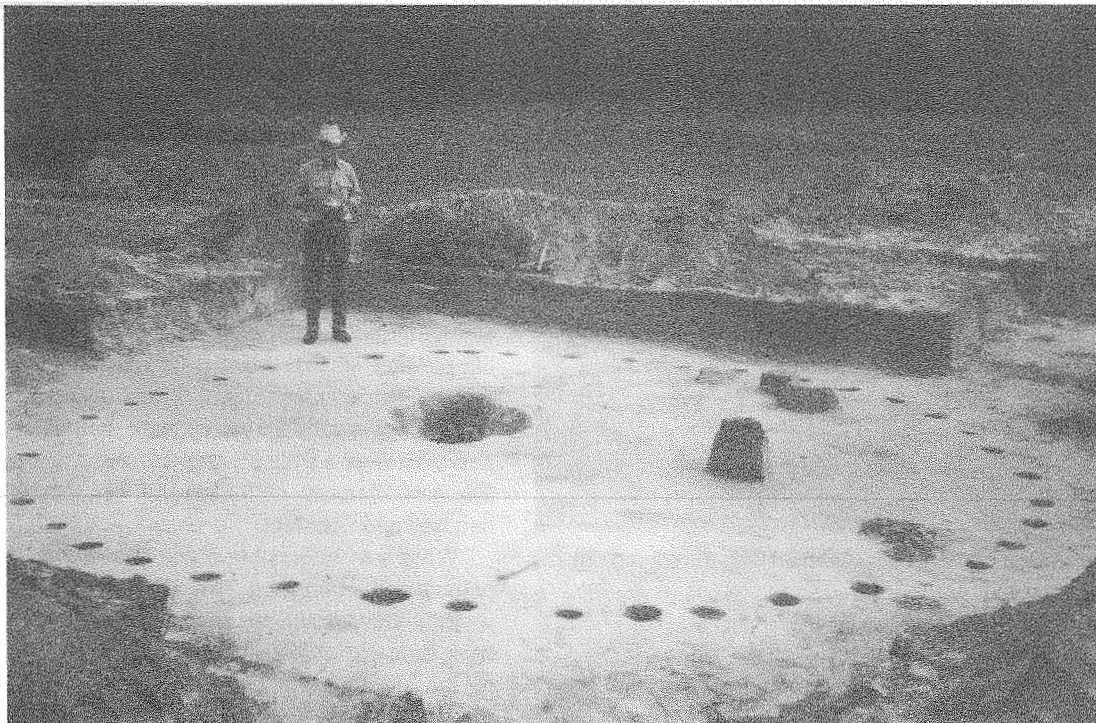
frightened of working on an Indian burial site. Old Mr. Soeul was extremely nervous and talked about Indian ghosts all the time. He would sometimes stand his shovel straight up in the trench when he was working, and if a wind happened to blow it over and there was a 'clunk,' he would scream and jump bodily out of the excavation trench and turn just as white as a sheet. We barely kept him there.

We started off trying to decide how to go about digging that mound. We decided to take a big pie slice section out of it. We didn't want to destroy the whole thing. Salvage archeology wasn't nearly so destructive back then as it is now. We were a little bit afraid to tear a site up. The base diameter of the mound was maybe a hundred and fifty feet.

What was interesting about it was that the pottery collection there was all sandy pottery, we didn't have Caddoan pottery at all. Of course back then we didn't quite know what all that meant, but since then Dee Ann Story [1990] has defined a Mossy Grove complex and an early ceramic complex all over that part of the state, that has sandy pottery.

When we started digging, we located indications of burials that had the most elaborate and fascinating burial goods. We had never seen anything like that, and I don't think anyone else working in Texas had. A copper reel-shaped gorget, a copper bracelet, a collection of several large quartz crystals, boat-shaped boat stones made from a stone from Arkansas, elk's teeth that had been preserved by copper salts, and very large spear points that had been ground smooth, and made of some exotic stone. So it turned out that this was the first site in the state that showed a strong connection with those highly ceremonial religious cultures that developed in the Ohio Valley. At the time we thought the main connection was with the Adena culture as it is found in Ohio. But luckily, visiting us on this dig was E. Mott Davis, who had just taken a job at the University of Texas that summer. He came out to watch the dig. He had worked in the lower Mississippi Valley, and he knew Marksville material. Marksville culture is strongly related in some regards to Hopewell culture. So he was able to suggest connections that we would have been slow in coming up with.

So anyhow, Jonas Short was the first definite site in the state that showed strong connections with all that religious development of Hopewell in the Ohio Valley.



Kelly Lathan and Caddo house at the Walter Bell site, McGee Bend Reservoir

The mound seems to have had one central cremation on a scooped out surface, that the mound was built on...one main burial...but then some secondary burials had been made in the mound, I presume later. All those fancy artifacts I listed were with the primary burial in the center of the mound, and right at the base of the mound.

And we had to saw pine trees off the mound with two-man bucksaws. I guess we probably had six to eight crewmen most of the time. We weren't really able to date the site at that time. Carbon dating was still pretty new. Ed Jelks got one or two solid carbon dates from the Humble Laboratory, but they are not worth much. By correlation you could be pretty sure nowadays that the site dates to about A.D. 200, give or take a few years.

We were never able to locate a village around that site. It's still a puzzle. I can't remember how thoroughly we looked, but we did run long trenches away from the mound in all four directions, for a considerable distance, and looked for surface indications. Whether it really was a separate religious structure for burial, or whether we simply failed to find a village that was really there, I can't say. I tend to think this was a separate burial mound. We only found a

few sherds, very few, and they were that sandy pottery that we call today 'Mossy Grove.'

Why I think that site is so interesting is that it shows some kind of really strong connections with the lower Mississippi Valley, because Hopewell-related things appear in Marksville culture sites, show strong connections with either Hopewell or Marksville directly. In Hopewell times there was some great religious phenomenon, that probably had its roots in the Ohio Valley and the states of Ohio and Indiana, and may have grown out of Adena culture. Just like the Olmec religion in Mexico, those religious notions must have spread far and wide.

There are some contemporaneous things in Austin County, such as at the Witte site [see Hall 1981], where you don't find mounds like this, but you do find a real proliferation of religious or ceremonial objects at about the same time, including some very interesting boat-stones from Arkansas.

Unfortunately archeologists don't like to think about things like religious cults and their development and the spread of religious ideas. It's too difficult. A lot of them think it's too speculative. But that's a bunch of hogwash. When you find what appear to be religious motifs, in Ohio and then scattered in odd places

from Manitoba to a mound in San Augustine County, Texas, I don't think there's any doubt that you have some spreading religious complex.

We took a big pie-shaped hunk, about a quarter of the mound, and then this grew in size, and I do believe we went back on the opposite quarter and did some smaller excavations all the way down. My memory is not good enough to really tell you what percentage of that mound was dug. The digging techniques were not bad, even though this was 1956. Very slow, very deliberate, keeping vertical walls so that we could look for any trace of pit outlines and that kind of thing. The trouble is that it was fairly friable soil that the mound had been constructed of, and fairly porous, so we didn't have much luck looking for pit outlines. I'm going to guess that we worked at Jonas Short less than two months. It was slow handwork. Nobody thought of using any earth moving equipment back then, thank goodness.

East Texas can be cold and wet during the winter. We lived in this old house called 'Grandma's old house,' an old dogtrot. I do remember a couple of mornings chopping up what was left of the back steps to try to get a little bit of heat so I could melt the water to brush my teeth. All I can say is, 'Beware of the memory of old coots, sometimes it is very faulty.'

W. A. "BILL" DAVIS

Although I have never captured any of Bill's words on tape or in letters, I feel compelled to say a few words about him. Bill Davis was by far the best "field man" that I ever worked with. He was a forester and surveyer in the Pineywoods of East Texas, around the city of Jasper. Ed Jelks found Bill during the work at McGee Bend reservoir, and persuaded him to join the archeological salvage team. Over a period of several years, he worked on projects all over East Texas, and all the way out to Diablo [Amistad] on the Rio Grande. Bill could outwork any combination of three or four other men on a crew and there wasn't any job that he couldn't or wouldn't do. Bill, a big rugged man, could take a double-bitted axe and chop down a tree 18 inches in diameter without taking a rest. And, he could make the tree fall exactly where he wanted it to fall. He could clean a profile in a mound so it was absolutely flat and smooth, and showed every trace of its cultural history. Bill

always kept all the tools sharp and polished, and he could unstick a hopelessly mired carryall. He knew every tree and plant in the forest.

Bill was an intelligent and gentle man. His distinctive old felt hat always had a folded-over spot on the right-front edge where he tipped his hat to all the ladies. His tobacco pipe left a warm pleasant aroma wafting around cold archeological sites. Bill told me a hundred stories about fatal family feuds, big alligators, shingle camps, and spiteful forest fires. A saying of local squirrel hunters was: "You got the money but we got the time...you keep poisoning the hardwoods and we'll keep burning the pines." It was a time when timber companies were killing 200-year-old hardwood trees and replacing them with new growth pines. I learned from Bill how to get the most good boards out of a salvaged cypress log at the little Bon Weir sawmill.

When we were working out in the limestone canyons at Diablo reservoir, Bill always had a far-away look in his eyes. He had spent his life looking at dense growth of trees and a small patch of sky. Rocky canyons and a far horizon made him feel very uneasy. On weekends, he would drive 500 miles home on Friday night to see his beloved wife, and come back on Sunday night, feeling better that his trees were still there.

Bill had memorized every projectile point type and pottery style out of the Handbook of Texas Archeology (Suhm et al. 1954), and could quote dates and distributions. I always felt comfortable with Bill on a crew, that the most information possible would be uncovered and recorded.

The last I heard, Bill had retired and was raising exotic quails outside of Alpine. But I know that every night he dreams of trees!



Bill Davis, on the left, finding postmolds at the Whelan site (41MR2), 1957. TARL photograph 29A6-2/68.



• WILSON W. CROOK •

Interview of Bill Crook done by Curtis Tunnell in Dallas, Texas, in October 1990.

"I was born in Dallas in 1922. My interest in archeology dates back to my parents taking me on trips when I was a kid. We went to Mexico City, and I climbed up the Pyramid of the Sun. And there was another trip out to Mesa Verde, and I clambered over the cliff dwellings. Between the two, I began to have an interest in archeology.

In World War II, I was down at north Fort Hood near Gatesville..."Goatsville" as we called it. And out behind our motor pool was a terrace of the Leon River where I went down and found arrowheads. During the war, while I was overseas, my folks sent me several papers, including Hibben's report on Sandia Cave. I read that with great interest."

#### Wheeler Site

"When I got out of the army, the Plainview report had come out by then [Sellards et al. 1947], and it was earthshaking. But what really got me going in archeology was the Wheeler site up at Carrollton. The Wheeler site doesn't exist any more, but it was brand new when I discovered it. For two or three years, I worked it all by myself. Then I met King Harris and got him into it. Old man Wheeler, who used to run everybody else out, always allowed me in. That was in 1948, 1949 and 1950.

We worked pretty much by terraces, and particularly the T-1 terrace. It has got a top layer of five feet of sand, and a next layer of four feet of red clay. To this day, I wonder how all the river terraces got red clay at the same time, and then all got gray sand on top of that. But they did, and they all have Archaic artifacts included in them. In the red clay, you've got really old Archaic."

#### Obshner Site

"We found down at the Obshner site [Crook and Harris 1955], that it had nothing in the sand. It [cultural material] was all in the clay. A couple of Scottsbluff points, several Plainview points, a Clovis point, and earlier

points of Archaic styles. These were 22 inches down in the red clay. There was absolutely nothing in the gray sand."

#### Carrollton Axes

"Up here we have axes...the Carrollton ax. It's chipped, and was probably a chopper, but was hafted. Two notches. Down at Obshner, we found five or six of them at the same time. Tom Campbell described a Carrollton ax from the bottom-most stratum in his Berclair terrace...deeper than the Folsom points."

#### Malakoff

"I decided to find out about the Malakoff site and go down there. I had the paper on it from Dr. Sellards. I went down there, and it was like coming home. And I thought about it and thought about it. The terrace system seemed somewhat different from my upstream Lewisville locality, that I had worked on so long. And then it dawned upon me. It's one terrace higher than up at Lewisville. And Evans said one very revealing thing...that there also was elephant in the terrace below where they found the heads. Well, the latest terrace that elephant occurs in is the T-2, and that's Lewisville. And this is T-3 at Malakoff. And those heads were right down at the base of that terrace...that's 100,000 years or something like that."

#### Woodpit

"The Woodpit, south of Dallas, is in the T-2 terrace, and down in the lower Schuler sands, which are beneath the upper Schuler clays, which is what the Lewisville site is in. Well down in those sands I found an occurrence that was unique. One day at the Woodpit, in the lower Schuler sand, I found in the north wall, a large cobble of quartzite about brick size. There it was in the midst of the laminated yellow sands. They accumulated with this rock in place. I have no explanation for it, except that man, back then, threw the quartzite into the river when it was at that level, and watched it splash. It was a long way away from a cobble field. I have seen that in my mind's eye for 30 years."



### Lewisville Site

“King and I went up to the Lewisville site area while the lake was under construction. We went up there even before White and Jelks were doing their survey. When we were all up there, we wound up at the Lewisville Site. And Ed Jelks told us ‘What are these red burnt places?’ The yellow sand and clay burns absolutely red. But a modern bonfire burns only an inch deep. You start talking about 14 and 20 inches deep, and that’s another story. I’ve often wondered if they were not earth ovens that were used over and over and over and over. This was about 1952.



R. King Harris excavating Hearth #1 at the Lewisville site, 1956. Photograph courtesy of Larry Banks.

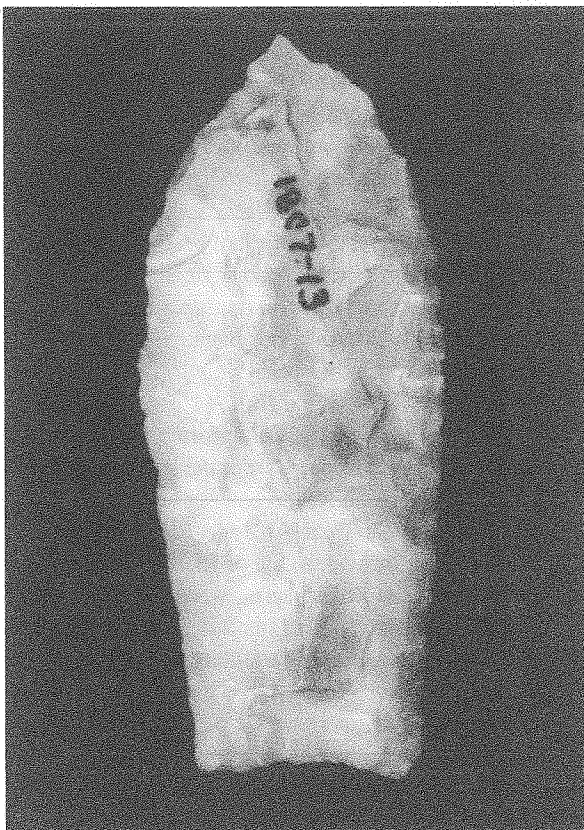
And Jelks showed us these red burned places and says, “Watch them! I have got some horse bones out of this place, and some hackberry seeds.” So we watched, and we worked it, and lo and behold, as time went on, one and then another hearth began to erode out and develop [Crook and Harris 1957]. And the layer two, as we called it, in the bottom of the pit, was the most prolific. And there were two or three hearths below that in layer one. There also were several on up until we got to the later Smithsonian excavation, which was up in layer five. Hearths were from the bottom to the top of the terrace, for 18 vertical feet!

The different layers were formed by caliche development. The vast majority of the site was in layer two, but there were some things showing down in layer one. And there were a number of hearths on up, and the Smithsonian came back later and got three more in layer five, which was up 15 feet or more above the lower

layers. Stanford found a bone point which has not been published. And then they were washing the caliche. And they washed out three different flecks of flint. One was Edwards chert, one was from Alibates, and one was quartzite. These are impossible to be in one place except by man’s design. But Stanford got them out of the hearth that he was working in. One of the little flakes fit right on the Clovis point to where you couldn’t see it. Now that couldn’t possibly be, because it was ten feet above where the point was found. Nevertheless, it was the same flint.

Over in the vicinity of Stanford’s site, I got a bunch of caliche nodules from the surface of the yellow clay, which was five or six feet above his site. I sent them to Beta [Analytic, Inc.] in Florida. They came back with a date of 15,770 years, five feet above Stanford’s hearth, where he had gotten all those things. And his hearth was ten feet above mine, which was another two feet above the layer one surface. Stanford got a carbon date of 26,600 [B.P.], or something like that, and it’s been published. That’s the date he got from his hearth. Our date, on down below, was 37,000 years or older. The Humble man told me that he would guess that it was around 40,000 or 42,000 [B.P.]. For my money, Lewisville isn’t dead yet!

Now, I don’t know whether the Clovis point that we got belongs with it or not. The first hearth we excavated was the biggest one. It was eight to ten feet across, and burned 18 inches underneath. We got a wolf claw, a horse bone, several mussel shells, hackberry seeds, that sort of thing. And then we got the Clovis point, supposedly. I don’t know whether it was or was not there. King called me, and he came running down saying that he had found it. He and his wife had been up there, and a rain had occurred, and we usually went and checked things after a rain. It was his turn to check, and he didn’t leave the point in place. He was all shaken up and he was excited. I was here in Dallas, so I didn’t see it in place. King found it up there and brought it in, and said it came from the hearth. We had just been scratching around, but not really digging. So, I don’t know for sure that the point came from there. But I would say that King never would have lied to me. Somebody else could have planted it for him to find. It seems obvious, that has got to be the case. From all the dates, that site has got to be older than the Clovis point.



Clovis point from the Lewisville site.

We did get a number of scrapers, and we got choppers around the hearth and other places. I got a scraper, very definitely a flake scraper, from right at the edge of hearth one. I found these, and the chopper, but I didn't see the point in place. King and Inus Marie were the only two who saw the exact circumstances under which it was found! But Lewisville is a site, because there were 22 hearths, all told, at various levels. In every hearth there were hackberry seeds and snails, burned almost without exception. There was *Terrapini canaliculata*, which is two and a half times larger than the modern version of the Carolina terrapin. And there were horse bones in most hearths. Horse was the most common. We had eight different horses. We had four or five hearths in level two. There was packrats, squirrels, rabbits, and all kinds of little junk, in the hearths and burned. I translate it as women and children scrounging while men were out hunting for big things. We had two big camels, and two buffalo. There were two mammoths and a black bear, a wolf and a coyote.

We got three of the big turtles burned in the hearth. It's my observation that the giant turtles

disappear when man first appears. Because the big turtle is good meat, lots of meat, and he's a cinch. He doesn't fight back and he doesn't charge. He dies out early in Africa and Asia because man was earliest there. He died out later here because man got here later. This is not the *Terrapini canaliculata*, this is the great big *Teotolani testudo* or whatever you want to call him...the big boy. We got three of them burned in the big hearth.

We worked there about five years, and then 1957 was the end of it. The West Fork of the Trinity has traditionally been more or less the divider between the western plains and the eastern cross-timbers...edge country. But I don't know what it was back then. It came and went. And there was certainly more caliche. That is the latest major caliche known this far east. And when the caliche formed, it had to be plains. With trees along the streams, the hackberries show that. One of the more common animals we got were prairie dogs. The site was occupied in hackberry time, in the fall.

In one hearth, number eight or something, there were three hearths in one. They had been dug almost exactly in the same spot. It was 40 inches deep, and there was a great big shell from a bird egg. I would presume turkey or goose.

You better believe that we looked, like an eagle, for hearths in that same terrace in other areas. The only traces that we got were at Lagow and Pimberton Hill. Pimberton Hill now does not exist because they cut it away entirely. It was a big terrace, with a gravel works, the same as the one up there at Lewisville. It had the same sequence and the same animals. I personally found a big knife-like artifact there in the yellow clay. There was obviously evidence of man's presence, but no hearths.

And then in Lagow Sandpit, we did an exploratory attempt at dating it by the Flourine, Uranium, Nitrogen [FUN] method. We got out the old Lagow Sandpit man. He was about 11,000 years old, instead of 20,000, 30,000, 40,000 [years old]. Lagow Sandpit is a T-1 terrace, and it's the eroded-off T-2 with red clay and gray sand on top. So at the bottom of the gray sand you've got about 10,000 years. He was in the top of the red clay. It was a burial into the harder stuff underneath, that they weren't going to dig into. He was as old as anything that T-1 has in it.

And then at Hickory Creek upstream from Lewisville, I found one or two burned places

and some burned nuts. I think there was one or two pieces of burned flint. These were in the T-2 yellow clay. But Lewisville is unique. There was a big exposure in the terrace at the right place, and the cut was real deep and long. The only cut that I saw comparable to that was downstream from Lewisville, where the Santa Fe Railroad had cut through that same terrace. I walked that long cut and there isn't one thing at all there. No red spots, no nothing. It's just all nice yellow clay and caliche. It is a couple of hundred yards south below the dam.

I don't know about the Clovis point at Lewisville, but I sure know about the rest of it. It is a site! And it is in the interglacial between the first and second glaciations of the Wisconsin. Between Wisconsin I and Wisconsin II.

There is almost nothing in T-3, and little exposure of it. In one exposure over by Parkland Hospital, there were a couple of mastodons. At another down below Travis School there was a mastodon. There were more mastodons the further back you go."

### CHARLES EUGENE MEAR

Interview with Gene Mear done in Austin by Curtis Tunnell on April 13, 1994.

#### Childhood Years

"I was born in Kenedy, Texas in 1926 when my mother went there to be with her sister, but about two weeks later we went back up to our ranch north of Leakey, Texas. My father unfortunately died in 1929 and my mother had little or no assets. My mother remarried a man who was a laborer on road gangs, and I remember we spent the winter of 1931-32 in an army squad tent on the banks of the Bosque River near Clairette. It was a very cold, terrible winter but then things got even worse. We had to sell the tent and we lived in a live oak mott west of Uvalde near Highway 90. Whenever it rained, we'd run under the bridge to get out of the rain. Otherwise we slept on cots in the oak trees. Things eventually got better and we moved back to Leakey. I graduated from grade school in Leakey and high school in Sabinal

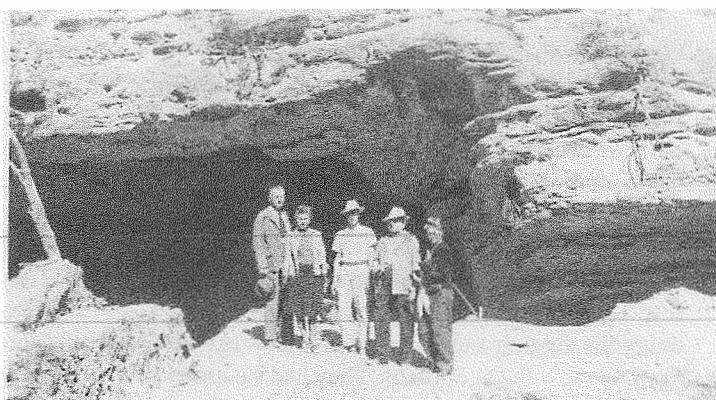
when I had just turned 16. I was too young for the service in World War II, but I worked at the airbase at Del Rio charging batteries for B-26's. In 1945, I was inducted into the army and sent to Japan in the army of occupation."

#### Kincaid Shelter

"I started school at Southwest Texas State in San Marcos. That Christmas holiday of 1947 I took two of my friends at Southwest Texas by the name of David Proper and James Churchwell for the Christmas holidays out to my mother's and stepfather's place. By this time they had bought a small ranch just north of Sabinal about three miles up the Sabinal River. During that vacation we went rabbit hunting over on Edgar Kincaid's ranch. In those days there weren't very many people and you usually went where you wanted to. We were rabbit hunting along the terrace of the Sabinal on the west side in the thick brush. We chased a rabbit into the brush and suddenly saw a rockshelter in the Anacacho limestone.

It was a small overhang but it showed a lot of signs of human occupation. Somebody had dug at least one big pit, or maybe two or three, in this burned rock mound material that was in the cave. We noticed that it had burned ashes and rock so we built a screen and started screening the back dirt from this trench and started finding artifacts, dart points and debitage. We collected a number of artifacts and then we came back to San Marcos after the holidays.

Proper went back with me several times and we would dig on Saturdays or screen some of the dirt on Saturdays and kept adding to a collection. This was at infrequent intervals about



Kincaid Rockshelter, 1948. Photograph provided by the author.

a month or two apart and finally Proper got to where it was inconvenient for him to come out so I carried on this desultory dig even though I didn't dig into the pristine material. I was just screening back dirt.

My half-brother, Kenneth Rochat, lives on the place now and he sometimes worked with me. He was about 11 or 12 I guess. We kept finding artifacts and one day in June of 1948, part of a spoil bank fell over and a very beautiful dart point fell out and was exposed and I didn't know what it was but it was different from any of the artifacts we'd been finding. Later on I found two more and by that time I figured these things must have some importance so I went down to San Antonio to the Witte Museum and talked to the director, Ann Quinlan, and she told me they were Folsom points, about 10,000 years old. She contacted Dr. Sellards at the Texas Memorial Museum.

By this time I had transferred from Southwest Texas to St. Mary's University in San Antonio and I was going to school there majoring in chemistry. Dr. Sellards sent out Glen Evans to visit me at the school there. I guess this was in September of '48. He immediately verified these were Folsom points and asked me to take him out there, which I did.

He could tell that it had been potted and vandalized quite a bit but it also had a lot of undisturbed material and so at his suggestion the Texas Memorial Museum got permission to excavate this cave. They started in the fall of '48, probably in about October and dug out quite a bit of the material in the cave and in the terrace out in front of it. Although it had been damaged quite a bit by these pothunters, who by the way were probably treasure seekers during the depression and the early '40s, inspired by J. Frank Dobie's books. There were a lot of potholes dug looking for buried treasures. The material they threw out had the artifacts in it and they had gone down all the way through the occupational layer and to a sterile zone below the oldest material.

This was called the Kincaid Shelter after Edgar Kincaid who owned the ranch. I spent a few weekends there while the museum was doing the digging and I remember one weekend that I spent with Dr. Sellards. They had a couple of tents on location and for some reason everybody else had gone back to Austin or

somewhere. Dr. Sellards was there by himself so I went out and stayed the night with him. We had a terrible storm that night, almost blew the tent down but we survived O.K.

One of the most interesting things they found was in the Clovis layer, where the folks had put down a rock pavement to get them up out of a seep spring that was in the back of the cave. It caused the floor to be muddy so these people placed stones down and got up out of the mud and this happened about 11,200 years ago.



Clovis era rock pavement in Kincaid Shelter. Photograph provided by the author.

Later in 1953, Dr. Campbell at the University of Texas Archeology Department went back. He had a summer school and completely finished cleaning out the cave and did some more test pits out in the front along the terrace.

The cobble layer has all been taken out and stored at Texas Memorial Museum. It was largely intact, whoever dug the big pit in there took out a couple of feet of it and the front edge of it had been eroded a little bit by the Sabinal back in the Pleistocene, you know back when the people were living there. You could see the mud had come up between the stones. They had carried the stones in from the Sabinal River. The shelter itself is in the Anacacho Limestone which is marly-soft limestone, of late Cretaceous age. Out on the stream in front of it, the Sabinal has a lot of boulders and cobbles of Edwards Limestone, and Comanche



Peak and Glen Rose, that have been brought down from the Utopia area during floods. They used those stones.

Among that rock pavement there were horse teeth, a big American lion tooth, big bison, big extinct bison among other things. It was a very interesting cave. It's a shame that the pot hunters had disturbed so much. The University found two more Folsom points both out of position and the three I found. There were five altogether."

### Friesenhahn Cave

"Glen Evans suggested that I transfer to the University of Texas and become a geologist, not an archeologist, because I didn't have any money and archeologists didn't get paid very much in those days. So I did, but before I came up here in 1949 to the University of Texas we went to an area north of San Antonio to the Friesenhahn Cave, part of the Friesenhahn Ranch.

We spent all summer there, Glen Evans and Grayson Meade and myself and John White, I believe, and my half-brother Kenneth Rochat and his father F. N. Rochat. We camped out on the site all summer long and excavated from this cave which was 30 feet below the surface.<sup>11</sup>

That cave had been known for many, many years. It was on the ranch called the Friesenhahn Ranch and it had a vertical opening. Natural weathering had created this opening to the surface, which was about five feet in diameter, and 30 feet down to the cave floor. The original cave entrance was sealed. It had a walk-in entrance back 20-25 thousand years ago, when this was being used by sabertooth tigers. Later on that entrance had collapsed and sealed over. Then this vertical opening had been eroded by running water to the surface and I assume that the Friesenhahn's who owned the place had found it many years before. It was pretty obvious. We had to put in a ladder, and used the ladder for going down to work there. We went down on that surface where sabertooth tiger, elephant, other bones were lying right on the surface and hadn't been disturbed for 20 or 25,000 years.

We had a great time all summer long. We camped out there under a

live oak mott and Glen Evans and Grayson Meade did all the cooking for us. I must say they are marvelous camp cooks. Of course I was a young 22 years old, still growing and food tasted good but they could really cook a great meal. I've never had such sumptuous camp food before or since. They had a little two burner Coleman stove and they had Dutch ovens and of course they knew how to pick good meat. They'd have good roast and all the vegetables and a nice dessert of boysenberries or something. We had bacon and eggs for breakfast.

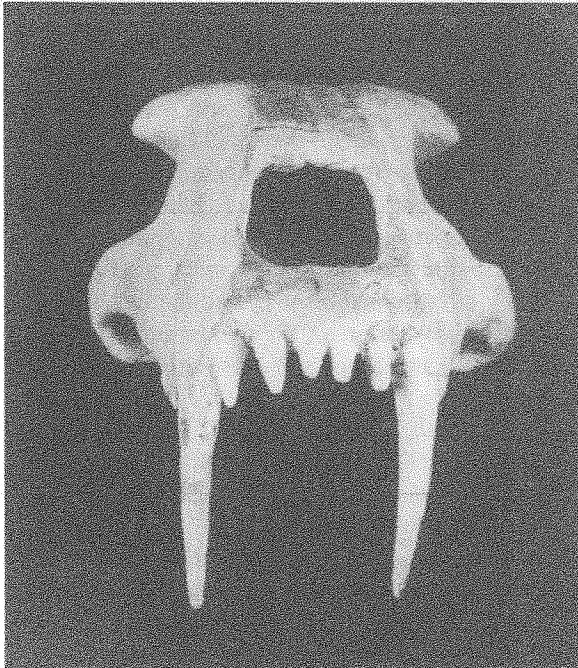
We dug trenches and squares and collected these fossils. This had been a sabertooth tiger den. What Grayson Meade called *Dinobastis* and we found out later on, was actually *Homotherium* but this cave had been used by these sabertooth tigers and their principal food was baby elephants and we found many pieces of the skeletons of baby elephants in there. Occasionally we would find part of a mature elephant but it would be a shoulder or a leg that they could carry in. We also found some big extinct peccaries in there. Found parts of dire wolves, the great big wolves that were extinct by the end of the Pleistocene; lots of turtles, some pieces of a very large camel. I remember finding a knee cap and Grayson Meade identified it as a patella of a giant camel that lived at that time.

We didn't find any definite signs of human occupation, although there were some chipped flints in there that were probably naturally chipped during water transport. That was a great, great summer. I got acquainted with Glen Evans



Friesenhahn Cave Excavations. TARL Photograph 41BX177-78.





Skull of Sabertooth Cat, Friesenhahn Cave. TARL Photograph 41BX177-8.

and Grayson Meade and they were a delightful pair to be around. I remember one night we were playing poker with matches from the camp matchbox, Grayson and Glen got into a bidding match that made us all drop out and finally Grayson dropped out and Glen had a straight flush. The first one I had ever seen. He won about five matches on it." [Chuckle.]

### Blackwater Draw

"In the summer of 1950, the Texas Memorial Museum under Dr. Sellards and Glen Evans went out to Blackwater Draw locality in New Mexico. There is an early man site there that had been discovered in the 1930s and was known to have Clovis. We went out there to spend the summer excavating. Dr. Sellards' main goal in life, as far as I could tell was to positively prove that early man did exist in America.

So we went out to work in what was a gravel pit operation. They had dug down into these layers of diatomaceous earth and sand that had this big extinct bison and deeper these big elephant. The points of the Clovis culture were with the elephant and Folsom points with the big bison. They're called *Bison antiquus*.

We set up in Cannon Air Force Base. We got permission to stay in one of the dormitories. It was a delightful summer. As long as you were in the shade, under the tarpaulin and the wind was blowing it wasn't too hot. Little clouds would build up during the day and occasionally a rain would come over. I remember everyday Glen and Grayson would have a bet as to whether it was going to rain or not and they would have to give odds of course that it wouldn't, and the one that said it was going to rain had to have some odds because you would never make it otherwise. But that was interesting to watch them dicker over what the odds were going to be for the day. And I was looking at a clear blue sky and I knew it wasn't going to rain and then about noon, little clouds were here and there and then a thunderhead would build up and then it would rain maybe over there, not where we were so that didn't count.

I worked with Dr. Sellards some in the Clovis layer. He had found some bone tools. These were tools like gouges and punches that had been made from elephant bones by the Clovis folk and he and I worked together, collected some of those and of course he was the general supervisor. I don't recall whether he stayed there actually very many days with us but he was there and very interested in it and very happy and excited about the things that were being found.

Glen Evans found, in the shallower sediments back up above the Folsom layer, prehistoric wells that the Indians had dug maybe 7,000 or so years ago. There was a very large drought in North America and other parts of the world from 5,000 to 7,000 years ago, much drier than it is now and it is known by the name of Altithermal. The Plains Indians had a hard time getting water so in some of these places as the water table dropped, they actually dug these wells and Glen Evans wrote that up in *American Antiquity* [Evans 1951]. We had a man working there, and his name was Adolph Witte. Glen Evans had known him up in North Texas. He was a farmer and he worked on several of these digs and he was the luckiest man about finding artifacts. I remember one day he was walking along the face of the pit where the gravel operation went on, stuck an ice pick in the wall and hit a Folsom point. Which is about a trillion to one odds!"

AFTERWORD

All of the people in this article are heroes of mine! They not only had the courage to devote a large part of their lives to the study of archeology, but they contributed significantly to preservation of our archeological heritage at a critical time in history. During the decades in which these people labored, much of the archeological record was being destroyed by vandalism, urban expansion, and various kinds of environmental degradation such as dozens of large lakes, and an extensive highway system.

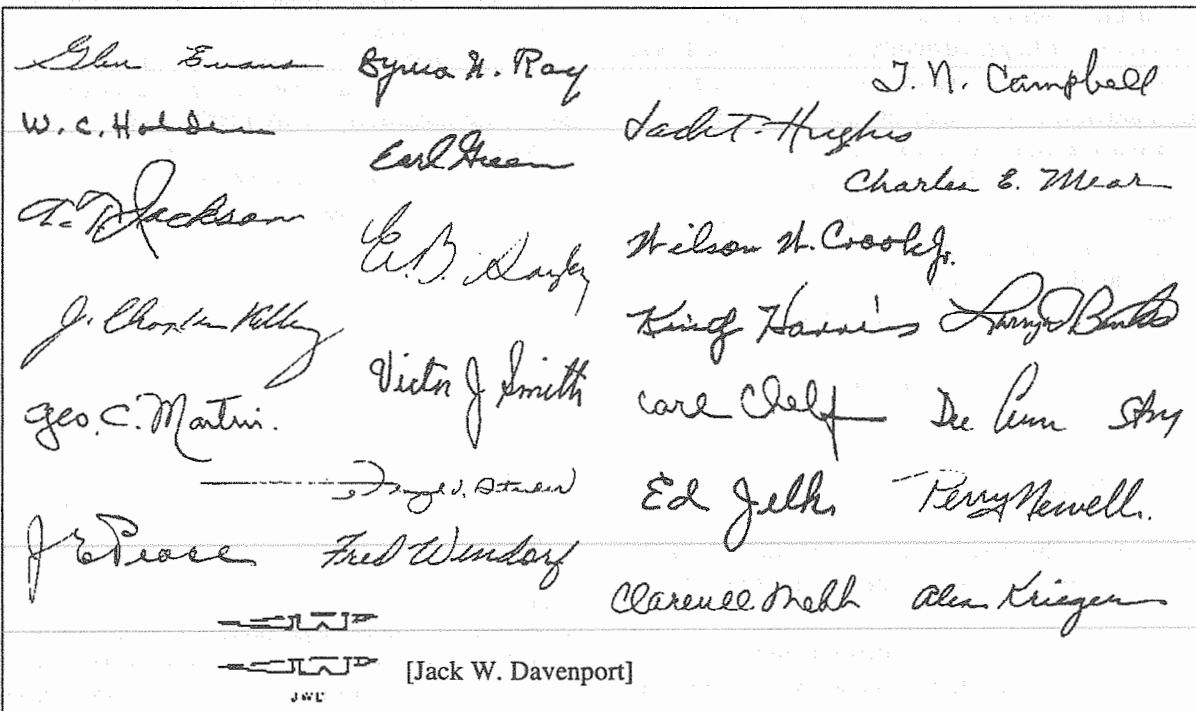
These archeological pioneers worked for low salaries, with minimal resources, under difficult conditions, yet they explored and documented sites in every corner of Texas. They braved snakes, mosquitoes, ticks, mud holes, freezing northers, blazing sunshine, dilapidated vehicles, ramshackle shacks, greasy-spoon cafes, and suspicious landowners, to save a precious page of the archeological record. In those days practitioners of anthropology and archeology were often a disappointment to their families and a threat to God-fearing Texans.

It seems that most of these pioneers became interested, or more precisely devoted, to archeology at an early age. Curiosity about artifacts, such as stone tools and pottery sherds, was usually the

catalyst that drew them into the archeological maelstrom, but somewhere along the way their interest evolved from being curious about relics to unraveling cultural history.

It was common for older men to patiently mentor young people who came to them with questions, like Pearce and Harris did for Wendorf, Victor Smith did for Wheat and Kelley, and like Hughes and Jelks did for me. Rapport between professional people and avocational practitioners was so common and so profound that the line between the two classes often blurred to insignificance.

This group of archeologists formed a rather small fraternity. Virtually everyone doing archeology in Texas during these decades knew everyone else who was practicing this crazy trade. They saw each other regularly at meetings, drank together, visited each other's digs, and carried on hard copy correspondence. Being acutely retentive sorts, a sizeable volume of field notes, letters, and publications chronicle the work of these pioneers. Although few women chose archeology as a profession in this period—Dee Ann Story being an outstanding exception—Pat Wheat, Pollyanna Hughes, Lula Kirkland, Inus Marie Harris, and other spouses were real field hands. Mrs. Quillin stands out as a dynamic director of the Witte Museum, and originator of their early archeological program.



I only regret that my limited time and energy precluded the inclusion in this volume of E. H. Sellards, Forrest Kirkland, R. King Harris, Frank Watt, Joe Cason, Robert Stephenson, Bob Turner, Adolph Witte, Mary Carson, Perry Newell, Kirk Bryan, William Duffen, Bob Forrester, Jerry Epstein, Mardith Schuetz, Jim Word, Bill Newcomb, Claude Albritton, Maria Mounger, Bill Bailey, Billy Harrison, Frank Bryan, C. B. Cosgrove, Dave Dibble, J. T. Patterson, J. B. Sollberger, Arthur Woolsey, Kathleen Gilmore, Joel Shiner, Rex Gerald, Pete Miroir, Grayson Meade, and a host of others who made significant archeological contributions during the middle decades of the century. The next generation will have to document their work, and I hope someone will begin recording oral histories of people like Shafer, Hester, Word, Prewitt, Collins, Corbin, Eileen Johnson, Bryant, Mallouf, Blaine, Hedrick, Fox, and others of that ilk, without delay! Many good archeological stories are just waiting to be told in someone's own words.

#### ACKNOWLEDGEMENTS

This paper includes the contributions of innumerable people over a period of 25 years. My gratitude goes out first to the individuals who generously shared their stories in the oral history interviews. The oral recordings, currently housed in the Texas Historical Commission Library, contain much more information than that used in this work and will be of increasing value to researchers in coming years.

Dr. Thomas R. Hester, Carolyn Spock, Rosario Casarez, and Laura Nightengale of the Texas Archeological Research Laboratory helped make photographic files available. Dr. George Ward Shannon of the Louisiana State Exhibit Museum in Shreveport, made the papers of Dr. Clarence Webb available for study. Dr. Jim Presley of Texarkana provided access to correspondence and clipping files of Dr. Gilbert McAllister. Dr. Roberta McGregor of the Witte Museum loaned tapes for transcription and opened correspondence files. Correspondence and photographs were generously loaned by Jeanette Chelf of Austin. Dr. Robert Leopold of the National Anthropological Archives (Smithsonian Institution) located and copied documents to me. Archives at the Phillips Academy in Andover, Massachusetts sent copies of correspondence between Floyd Studer and Dr. Warren King

Moorehead. Archives of the Big Bend at Sul Ross University made Victor Smith materials available to this study. Photos were provided by the Arizona State Museum in Tucson, Arizona.

The manuscript for this volume was prepared and immeasurably improved by Marlene Casarez. Roland Pantermuehl prepared the many illustrations for publication. Dr. Timothy K. Perttula encouraged the completion of this project, did a heroic job of editing the manuscript, and prepared the extensive bibliography. Without his help, this study would never have been published.

#### NOTES

1. Herbert Eugene Bolton was visiting in Austin in the summer of 1914, when Pearce talked with him. In July of that year, Bolton went from Austin down to the Keeran ranch and located the remains of La Salle's Fort Saint Louis on Garcitas Creek (see Tunnell 1998).

2. Attached to the letter is a seven-page proposal for an ARCHEOLOGICAL SURVEY OF TEXAS, submitted to the Witte Museum by E. B. Sayles of Abilene. He says "The principal purpose of the survey would be to obtain specimens. At the same time data relating to each section covered, area and site maps, etc. Such a survey would make many contacts throughout the state. This would give an intensive survey of small areas throughout the state, located in sections possessing different physiographic features (which ordinarily means some change in cultural remains, and at least a difference in types of artifacts, sites, etc.) This would give the Museum far more specimens than it would likely ever want to display, but these should prove valuable for exchange, particularly with out of state institutions that are keenly anxious to obtain specimens from Texas." A full year of intensive fieldwork was proposed in eight regions of the state.

3. I called Lee Johnson to see if he knew how to spell McIlhane, and it turned out that he was related to them by marriage. He said they retired their old trucks and bought a fleet of horse-drawn milk wagons and hired women drivers in order to make a show of how they were supporting the war effort. Lee enjoyed watching the horses and milk wagons as a child. The horses were mostly gray colored. The horses were very smart and knew where to turn and where to stop. If the driver tried to make them turn at the wrong place, there would be trouble. People collected the horse droppings from the street for their victory gardens, which were also part of the war effort.

4. When I arrived in Austin in the late 1950s, the old Little Campus Lab was still in use, as were the chain-flush toilets described by McAllister. Some historic graffiti on the wall by one of the old toilets read: "To hell with Spain; Remember the Maine; And don't forget to pull the chain." Since this complex dated to the Spanish-American War, I assume the graffiti dated to that era as well.

5. At a later date, I interviewed Judge James Kazen of Laredo who tried a test case in which a Navajo man was arrested for possession of Peyote. After extensive testimony by expert witnesses, Judge Kazen ruled that Peyote was a sacrament in the Native American Church. This set the stage for the next legislature to exempt it from the drug laws for use by Native Americans.

6. While talking to Mr. Tony Andretta in Alpine, Texas in the late 1980s, I was informed that he had been given all of Victor Smith's papers by Dr. Warnoch of Sul Ross University. Mr. Andretta had file drawers of the papers in his home in Alpine, but was not willing to let them be examined. Mr. Andretta has passed away in recent years.

7. In a 1998 interview with Marjorie Krieger, she said that for decades Alex had a roaring in his ears, which ranged from a dull background sound to a crescendo. Sometimes he could do nothing but sit and hold his hands against his ears with his eyes closed, enduring the pain. Marjorie said she believed the hearing impairment was hereditary, because Alex's father and grandfather had worn hearing aids, and his brother was also affected.

8. In 1939, Dr. Marcus S. Goldstein joined the WPA team as a physical anthropologist. He was immediately faced with the formidable task of cataloging, restoring, measuring, and analyzing hundreds of human skeletal remains from WPA projects across the state. In an initial inventory for A. T. Jackson dated September 1, 1939, Goldstein summarized information on 147 skulls and 128 skeletons from 29 Texas counties. Over the next two years, he received dozens (maybe hundreds) of skeletal remains from Floyd Studer, W. C. Holden, Cyrus Ray, Victor Smith, King Harris, and many other individuals and institutions around the state. By 1942, Goldstein had prepared a hefty manuscript on analysis of skeletal remains of Texas Indians. He tried unsuccessfully to get the University of Texas to publish his work for two years. In 1945 he was negotiating with the Carnegie Institution to publish the manuscript, but they eventually rejected it because of the large number of tables and illustrations. The *Round Rock Leader* said in an article dated August 25, 1940:

Dr. Marcus S. Goldstein, physical anthropologist at the University of Texas, reported that Indian skeletons found by his WPA sponsored excavations showed definite effects of tuberculosis of the bone, syphilis and arthritic conditions, not to mention teeth with cavities and with enamel completely worn away.

9. An article in the *Dallas Morning News* for June 16, 1938 says:

Fred Wendorf, 13-year old son of Mrs Margaret Wendorf, is well on his way toward being an outstanding authority on Indian lore, already having a collection

which has drawn favorable comment from J. E. Pearce, head of the Texas University Department of Anthropology. The young collector said that his findings had been left principally by Caddo and Wichita Indians. During his four years of exploring, Fred has discovered a mound near Ables Springs which led the University of Texas anthropological crew to an investigation. In a letter from Mr. Pearce of the Texas University, Fred was invited to join the school's crew on location and encouraged to continue his work in Kaufman County.

10. While working at McGee Bend, Ed Jelks quickly realized that plywood legs were no good on shaker screens, so he had some legs made out of spring steel about two inches wide and a quarter-inch thick. The screens were made out of two-by-fours and the steel legs were driven into the ground and then bolted directly to them. As you used these screens the legs would eventually break across the boltholes from the flexing. Ed had something like sixteen or eighteen legs made and we had broken half of them before very long. The next step in the evolution of the screens was to have an angle-iron frame made for the screens to sit in. The legs were fastened to hinges on the corners of the frame and there were no more broken legs. Of course these worked well for years.

11. On 16 June 1997, Gene and Glen told me this story. When they were getting ready to work at Friesenhahn Cave, they arrived late in the day. The father and his sons...big German men...were loading big sacks of corn. Glen was a little skinny guy in those days, but strong. He went over to help them load corn, but one of the big boys looked him over and said "He ain't strong enough." Glen was chagrined. Later they all went out to the cave and let a rope down through a hole...a vertical drop onto the debris cone. Glen, Gene, and the big German son went down the rope and saw an amazing array of fossil bones lying around the floor of the cave. As it began to get dark, the father, up on the surface, called for his son to come up so they could go home. The heavy German son tried to climb the rope, but could not. He tried again and again, but failed. Glen easily climbed the rope and got out of the cave. The father was agitated and said why hasn't my son come up? Glen said "He ain't strong enough!" [Chuckle.] They had to tie two ladders together and put them down into the cave so the son could get out.

## BIBLIOGRAPHY

- Bailey, G. L.  
1998 Spadwork for History: A Film Series Directed by E. Mott Davis. In *Chapters in the History of Texas Archeology: Selected Papers by E. Mott Davis*. Texas Archeological Research Laboratory, The University of Texas at Austin.

- Branda, E. S. (editor)  
1976 *The Handbook of Texas*, Vol. 3. Texas State Historical Association, Austin.
- Campbell, T. N.  
1947 The Johnson Site: Type Site of the Aransas Focus of the Texas Coast. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 18:40-75.  
1952 The Kent-Crane Site: A Shell Midden on the Texas Coast. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 23:39-77.  
1956 Archeological Material from Five Islands in the Laguna Madre, Texas Coast. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 27:7-46.  
1988 *The Indians of Southern Texas and Northeastern Mexico: Selected Writings of Thomas Nolan Campbell*. Texas Archeological Research Laboratory, The University of Texas at Austin.
- Cason, J. F.  
1952 Report on Archeological Salvage in Falcon Reservoir, Season of 1952. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 23:218-259.
- Chelf, C.  
1939 *A Group Burial from Lamar County*. Information Circular No. 6. Texas Memorial Museum, Austin.  
1946 Grooved Clubs from a Peat Bog in Milam County, Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 17:42-46.
- Collins, M. B.  
1999 Named Indian Groups in Texas: A Guide to Entries in the *New Handbook of Texas*. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 70:7-16.
- Creel, D. G.  
1996 Hatchel-Mitchell Site. In *The New Handbook of Texas*, Vol. 3, edited by R. Tyler, pp. 504-505. Texas State Historical Association, Austin.
- Crook, W. W., Jr. and R. K. Harris  
1955 Scottsbluff Points in the Obshner Site near Dallas, Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 26:75-100.  
1957 Hearths and Artifacts of Early Man near Lewisville, Texas, and associated Faunal Material. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 28:7-97.  
1961 Significance of a New Radiocarbon Date from the Lewisville Site. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 32:327-330.
- Davenport, J. W.  
1938 *Archeological Exploration of Eagle Cave, Langtry, Texas*. Big Bend Basket Maker Papers No. 4. Witte Memorial Museum, San Antonio.
- 1941 *Painted Pebbles from the Lower Pecos and Big Bend*. Bulletin V. Witte Memorial Museum, San Antonio.
- Davis, E. M.  
1962 Archaeological Salvage Investigations of the Harling Mound in Fannin County, Texas. *American Philological Society Yearbook 1961*:487-489.
- Davis, W. A. and E. M. Davis  
1960 *The Jake Martin Site: An Archaic Site in the Ferrell's Bridge Reservoir Area, Northeastern Texas*. Archaeology Series No. 3. Department of Anthropology, The University of Texas at Austin.
- Duffield, L. F. and E. B. Jelks  
1961 *The Pearson Site: A Historic Indian Site at Iron Bridge Reservoir, Rains County, Texas*. Archaeology Series No. 4. Department of Anthropology, The University of Texas at Austin.
- Evans, G. L.  
1951 Prehistoric Wells in eastern New Mexico. *American Antiquity* 17:1-8.
- Eyerly, T. L.  
1907 The Wolf Creek Expedition. *The Student* II:13-36. Canadian Academy, Canadian, Texas.  
1908 The Buried City of the Panhandle. *Kansas Academy of Science* 21:219-228.
- Ford, J. A. and C. H. Webb  
1956 *Poverty Point, A Late Archaic Site in Louisiana*. Anthropological Papers 46(1). American Museum of Natural History, New York.
- Gladwin, H. S., E. W. Haury, E. B. Sayles, and N. Gladwin  
1937 *Excavations at Snaketown: Material Culture*. Medallion Papers No. 25. Gila Pueblo, Globe, Arizona.
- Goldschmidt, W. R.  
1935 Some Archeological Sites in Titus County and Their Relation to East Texas Prehistory. Master's thesis, Department of Anthropology, The University of Texas at Austin.
- Green, F. E.  
1961 The Monahans Dunes Area. In *Paleoecology of the Llano Estacado*, edited by F. Wendorf, pp. 22-47. Publications of the Fort Burgwin Research Center No. 1. Museum of New Mexico Press, Santa Fe.  
1962 Additional Notes on Prehistoric Wells at the Clovis Site. *American Antiquity* 28:230-234.  
1963 The Clovis Blades: An Important Addition to the Llano Complex. *American Antiquity* 29:145-165.
- Hall, G. D.  
1981 *Allens Creek: A Study in the Cultural Prehistory of the Lower Brazos River Valley, Texas*. Research Report 61. Texas Archeological Survey, The University of Texas at Austin.



- R. F. and R. A. Brooks  
Lewisville: Ancient Campsite or Wood Rat Houses? *Southwestern Journal of Anthropology* 21(2):155-165.
- R. F. (editor)  
*A Manual for Archaeological Field Methods*. National Press, Millbrae, California.
- , W. C.  
Some Recent Explorations and Excavations in North West Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 1:23-35.  
Excavation of Saddleback Ruin. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 5:39-52.
- y, V. T.  
*Paleoindian Geoarchaeology of the Southern High Plains*. University of Texas Press, Austin.
- I, B. B., D. C. Creel, and G. M. Jacobs  
E. B. "Ted" Sayles, Pioneer Southwestern Archaeologist. *Kiva* 63(1):69-85.
- n, A. T.  
Some Pipes of East Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 5:69-86.  
Types of East Texas Pottery. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 6:38-57.  
Ornaments of East Texas Indians. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 7:11-28.  
Exploration of Certain Sites in Culberson County, Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 9:146-192.  
*Picture-Writing of Texas Indians*. Publication 3809 and Anthropological Papers 2. University of Texas at Austin.  
Fire in East Texas Burial Rites. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 10:77-113.  
The Fall Creek Sites. In *Annual Report of WPA and the University of Texas Archaeological Research, Lake Buchanan, 1936-1937*, edited by J. E. Pearce, pp. 12-118. Bulletin 3802. University of Texas at Austin.
- . B.  
The Archeology of McGee Bend Reservoir, Texas. Ph.D. dissertation, Department of Anthropology, The University of Texas at Austin.  
Reminiscences of Archeology in Texas 1947-1968. *The Kansas Anthropologist* 18(2):1-17.
- . B. and C. D. Tunnell  
*The Harroun Site, A Fulton Aspect Component of the Caddoan Area, Upshur County, Texas*. Archaeology Series No. 2. Department of Anthropology, The University of Texas at Austin.
- Jelks, E. B. (editor)  
1967 The Gilbert Site: A Norteño Focus Site in Northeastern Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 37:1-248.
- Johnson, L., Jr.  
1962 The Yarbrough and Miller Sites of Northeastern Texas, with a Preliminary Definition of the LaHarpe Aspect. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 32:141-284.  
1964 *The Devil's Mouth Site: A Stratified Campsite at Amistad Reservoir, Val Verde County, Texas*. Archaeology Series No. 6. Department of Anthropology, The University of Texas at Austin.
- Jones, V. H.  
1949 Maize from the Davis Site: Its Nature and Interpretation. In *The George C. Davis Site, Cherokee County, Texas*, by H. P. Newell and A. D. Krieger, pp. 241-249. Memoirs No. 5. Society for American Archaeology, Menasha, Wisconsin.
- Kelley, J. C.  
1939 Archaeological Notes on the Excavation of a Pithouse near Presidio, Texas. *El Palacio* 46(10):221-234.  
1947a The Lehmann Rock Shelter: A Stratified Site of the Toyah, Uvalde, and Round Rock Foci. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 18:115-128.  
1947b The Cultural Affiliation and Chronological Position of the Clear Fork Focus. *American Antiquity* 13(2):97-109.  
1948 Arrows or Dart Shaft Tools and Problematical Incised Stones from central and Western Texas. *El Palacio* 55(3):73-85.  
1986 *Jumano and Patarabueye Relations at La Junta de los Rios*. Anthropological Papers No. 77. Museum of Anthropology, University of Michigan, Ann Arbor.
- Kelley, J. C., T. N. Campbell, and D. J. Lehmer  
1940 *The Association of Archaeological Materials with Geological Deposits in the Big Bend Region of Texas*. Publications 10. West Texas Historical and Scientific Society, Alpine.
- Krieger, A. D.  
1945 An Inquiry into Supposed Mexican Influence on a Prehistoric Cult in the Southern United States. *American Anthropologist* 47:483-515.  
1946 *Culture Complexes and Chronology in Northern Texas, with Extensions of Puebloan Datings to the Mississippi Valley*. Publication No. 4640. The University of Texas at Austin.
- 1948 Importance of the "Gilmore Corridor" in Culture Contacts between Middle America and the Eastern United States. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 19:155-178.

- Krieger, A. D. and J. T. Hughes  
1950 *Archeological Salvage in the Falcon Reservoir Area*. Progress Report No. 1. The University of Texas at Austin.
- Martin, G. C.  
1929 Notes on some Texas Coast Campsites and other Remains. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 1:50-57.  
1930 Two Sites on the Callo del Oso, Nueces County, Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 2:7-17.  
1933 *Archeological Exploration of the Shumla Caves*. Big Bend Basket Maker Papers, Bulletin 3. Witte Memorial Museum, San Antonio.  
n.d. *The Big Bend Basketmaker*. Big Bend Basket Maker Papers, Bulletin 1. Witte Memorial Museum, San Antonio.
- Martin, G. C. and S. Woolford  
1932 Painted Pebbles of the Texas Big Bend. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 4:20-24.
- Miller, E. O. and E. B. Jelks  
1952 Archeological Excavations at the Belton Reservoir, Coryell County, Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 23:168-217.
- Moore, C. B.  
1912 Some Aboriginal Sites on Red River. *Journal of the Academy of Natural Sciences of Philadelphia* 14(4):526-636.
- Mothershead, H. G.  
1981 *My Sayles Kith and Kin*. Privately printed. Copy in author's files.
- Newell, H. P. and A. D. Krieger  
1949 *The George C. Davis Site, Cherokee County, Texas*. Memoir No. 5. Society for American Archaeology, Menasha, Wisconsin.
- O'Brien, M. J. and R. L. Lyman  
1998 *James A. Ford and the Growth of Americanist Archaeology*. University of Missouri Press, Columbia.
- O'Brien, M. J. and R. L. Lyman (editors)  
1999 *Measuring the Flow of Time: The Works of James A. Ford, 1935-1941*. University of Alabama Press, Tuscaloosa.
- Patterson, J. T.  
1936 *The Corner-Tang Flint Artifacts of Texas*. Bulletin 3618 and Anthropological Papers 1(4). University of Texas at Austin.
- Pearce, J. E.  
1927 Anthropology as an Element of Rational Education. *The Southwestern Political and Social Science Quarterly* VIII(3).  
1935 *Tales that Dead Men Tell*. Bulletin No. 3537. The University of Texas at Austin.
- Pearce, J. E. and A. T. Jackson  
1933 *A Prehistoric Rock Shelter in Val Verde County, Texas*. Publication 3327. The University of Texas at Austin.
- Ray, C. N.  
1929 A Differentiation of the Prehistoric Cultures of the Abilene Section. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 1:7-22.  
1931 Recent Archeological Researches in the Abilene Section. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 3:76-89.  
1932 Archeological Research in central West Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 4:63-70.  
1935 The Pottery Complex Artifacts of the Abilene Region. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 7:70-88.  
1938 The Clear Fork Culture Complex. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 10:193-207.
- Runkles, F. A.  
1964 The Garza Site: A Neo-American Campsite near Post, Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 35:101-126.
- Sayles, E. B.  
1929 Some Types of Archaeological Sites near Abilene, Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 1:43-49.  
1935 *An Archaeological Survey of Texas*. Medallion Papers No. 17. Gila Pueblo, Globe, Arizona.  
1936 *An Archaeological Survey of Chihuahua, Mexico*. Medallion Papers No. 22. Gila Pueblo, Globe, Arizona.
- Sayles, E. B., with M. E. Stevens  
1960 *Throw Stone, the First American Boy 25,000 Years Ago*. Reilly and Lee, Chicago.  
1962 *Little Cloud and the Great Plains Hunter, 15,000 Years Ago*. Reilly and Lee, Chicago.
- Sellards, E. H.  
1938 Artifacts Associated with Fossil Elephant. *Geological Society of America Bulletin* 49:999-1010.  
1941 Stone Images from Henderson County, Texas. *American Antiquity* 7(1):29-38.

- 1952 *Early Man in America*. University of Texas Press, Austin.
- Sellards, E. H., G. L. Evans, and G. E. Meade  
1947 Fossil Bison and Associated Artifacts from Plainview, Texas. *Geological Society of America Bulletin* 58:927-954.
- Skinner, S. A., R. K. Harris, and K. M. Anderson (editors)  
1969 *Archaeological Investigations at the Sam Kaufman Site, Red River County, Texas*. Contributions in Anthropology No. 5. Department of Anthropology, Southern Methodist University, Dallas.
- Smith, J. E., II  
1993 The Vinson Site (41LT1): A Norteño Focus Indian Village in Limestone County, Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 64:65-162.
- Smith, V. J.  
1934 *Carved Rock Shelter*. Circular No. 1. West Texas Historical and Scientific Society, Alpine.  
1938 *Carved Rock Shelter*. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 10:222-233.
- Smith, V. J. and J. C. Kelley  
1933 *The Meriwether Rock Shelter*. Circular No. 3. West Texas Historical and Scientific Society, Alpine.
- Stephenson, R. L.  
1952 The Hogge Bridge Site and the Wylie Focus. *American Antiquity* 17(4):299-312.  
1970 Archeological Investigations in the Whitney Reservoir Area, Central Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 41:37-286.
- Story, D. A.  
1990 Cultural History of the Native Americans. In *The Archeology and Bioarcheology of the Gulf Coastal Plain*, by D. A. Story, J. A. Guy, B. A. Burnett, M. D. Freeman, J. C. Rose, D. G. Steele, B. W. Olive, and K. J. Reinhard, pp. 163-366. Research Series No. 38. 2 Vols. Arkansas Archeological Survey, Fayetteville.
- Suhm, D. A., A. D. Krieger, and E. B. Jelks  
1954 An Introductory Handbook of Texas Archeology. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 25 (whole volume).
- Tunnell, C. D.  
1962 Oblate: A Rockshelter Site. In *Salvage Archeology of Canyon Reservoir: The Wunderlich, Footbridge, and Oblate Sites*, by L. Johnson, Jr., D. A. Suhm, and C. D. Tunnell, pp. 77-126. Bulletin No. 5. Texas Memorial Museum, Austin.  
1992 Victor J. Smith, Pioneer Archeologist. *Journal of Big Bend Studies* 4.
- 1998 A Cache of Cannons: La Salle's Colony in Texas. *Southwestern Historical Quarterly* 102(1):18-43.
- Tyler, R. (editor)  
1996 *The New Handbook of Texas*. 6 Vols. Texas State Historical Association.
- Webb, C. H.  
1940 House Types among the Caddo Indians. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 12:49-75.  
1946 Two Unusual Types of Chipped Stone Artifacts from Northwest Louisiana. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 17:9-17.  
1959 *The Belcher Mound, A Stratified Caddoan Site in Caddo Parish, Louisiana*. Memoirs No. 16. Society for American Archaeology, Salt Lake City.  
1963 The Smithport Landing Site: An Alto Focus Component in De Soto Parish, Louisiana. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 34:143-188.  
1977 The Poverty Point Culture. *Geoscience and Man* 17. Louisiana State University, Baton Rouge.
- Webb, C. H. and M. Dodd, Jr.  
1939 Further Excavations of the Gahagan Mound: Connections with a Florida Culture. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 11:92-128.
- Webb, C. H., J. L. Shiner, and E. W. Roberts  
1971 The John Pearce Site (16CD56): A San Patrice Site in Caddo Parish, Louisiana. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 42:1-50.
- Webb, C. H., F. E. Murphey, W. G. Ellis, and H. R. Green  
1969 The Resch Site (41HS16), Harrison County, Texas. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological Society* 40:3-106.
- Wendorf, F.  
1966 *A Guide for Salvage Archeology*. Museum of New Mexico Press, Santa Fe.
- Wendorf, F. (editor)  
1961 *Paleoecology of the Llano Estacado*. Publications of the Fort Burgwin Research Center No. 1. Museum of New Mexico Press, Santa Fe.
- Wendorf, F. and J. J. Hester (editors)  
1975 *Late Pleistocene Environments of the Southern High Plains*. Publications of the Fort Burgwin Research Center No. 9. Taos, New Mexico.
- Wendorf, F., A. D. Krieger, C. C. Albritton, Jr., and T. D. Stewart  
1955 *The Midland Discovery*. University of Texas Press, Austin.

Wheat, J. B.

- 1940 Preliminary Report on Excavations of the Hodges Site. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 12:195-216.
- 1947 Notes on the W. A. Myatt Site. *Bulletin of the Texas Archeological and Paleontological Society* 18:87-93.

- 1953 *An Archeological Survey of the Addicks Dam Basin, Southeast Texas*. River Basin Surveys, Papers No. 4. Bulletin 154:143-252. Bureau of American Ethnology, Smithsonian Institution, Washington, D.C.



*The Coronado Expedition to Tierra Nueva: The 1540-1542 Route Across the Southwest*, edited by Richard Flint and Shirley Cushing Flint. University Press of Colorado, Niwot, 1997. xix + 442 pp.

---

Reviewed by Timothy K. Perttula

---

*The Coronado Expedition to Tierra Nueva* is a compendium of essays on the route of the 1540-1542 expedition of Francisco Vasquez de Coronado from Sonora in Mexico to the tall-grass prairies of Kansas, crossing along the way the Pueblos of New Mexico and the Llano Estacado of eastern New Mexico and the high plains of Texas. The product of a 1992 conference organized by the editors, the papers in the volume are concerned with "where the encounters [between the Old World-New World] of 1539-1542 occurred and what people were involved" (p. xviii).

Following an introduction by Carroll L. Riley that reviews the various hypotheses concerning the expedition's routes across the Southwest and discusses the contents of the volume, the volume is organized into five parts. Part I concerns the hypotheses proposed and documentary, historical, and archeological evidence employed by prior and present researchers to delineate the Coronado entrada's route, while Part II examines the 1538-1539 precedents and purposes of the expedition, including the entradas of Marcos de Niza in the Southwest and the De Soto entrada in the Southeast. Charles Polzer's essay in Chapter 2 reminds the reader of the limitations of historical documents in attempting to pinpoint the various routes of the 1540-1542 expedition.

Also in Part II, William Hartmann and Madeleine Rodack each discuss the 1539 journey of Fray Marcos de Niza into the Southwest, as his journey led directly to the viceroy's authorizing Coronado to travel to Cibola to find out more about the area and its inhabitants. Hartmann strongly suggests that Niza's *Relacion* was credible, while Rodack argues that the Zuni village sighted by Niza in 1539 was the village of Kiakima rather than Hawikuh.

Charles Ewen's essay in Part II on the archeological discoveries at the first winter encampment of De Soto in Tallahassee, Florida, provide a contemporaneous material culture context (i.e., iron

wrought nails, crossbow quarrels, majolica, glass beads, copper coins) for the purposes of identifying the Spanish presence along the Coronado entrada. Similarly, Diane Rhodes' paper in Part I discusses the technology of crossbow boltheads, and she suggests that the recovery of boltheads in 16th century archeological contexts in the Southwest may be compelling indications of the Coronado entrada. In a related paper by Richard Flint, he reviews the material culture component of the expedition (i.e., crossbow parts, brass or copper aglets, Nueva Cadiz beads, brass Clarksdale bells, and obsidian-edged swords and weapons), focusing particularly on the material culture of the Indians from Mexico that accompanied the Coronado expedition, namely items such as ceramic vessels, projectile points, comales, and copper sandal-making tools that may be found on expedition sites.

Parts III-V begin with maps of the regions crossed by the entrada, and historiographical essays by Joseph P. Sanchez on the route of Coronado from Compostela (in Sonora) to Cibola (Zuni), Cibola to Rio de Cicuye (on the Rio Grande in New Mexico), and Rio de Cicuye to Quivira (in Central Kansas). These parts also include a series of historical, ethnographic, and archeological essays that discuss various components of, and evidence for, the route in these three regions.

In Part III, Jerry Gurule considers place names and locales mentioned in the accounts of the Coronado expedition on its northward trek across Sonora, including mountains, passes, rivers, pueblos, and canyons. William A. Duffen and Hartmann's essay discuss the 1936 excavations at the 76 Ranch Ruin in the Sulphur Springs valley of southeast Arizona, considered by several archeologists and historians as the site of Chichilticale mentioned by Coronado chroniclers, but they cannot confirm its location at the Salado Pueblo ruin. In separate papers, Daniel T. Reff and Richard A. Pailles review archeological, epidemiological, and ethnological information concerning the Coronado



expedition's route through Sonora, probably along the middle Sonora valley.

The route from Cibola to Rio de Cicuye is discussed in Part IV papers by Edmund J. Ladd, Elinore M. Barrett, Bradley J. Vierra and Stanley M. Hordes, and the editors. Ladd's paper provides an interesting account of the hostile reception received by Coronado when they arrived among the Zuni in 1540, and he suggests that the Spanish interrupted a sacred solstice ceremony. The essay by Barrett is a detailed discussion of the geography of middle Rio Grande Pueblos between 1540-1598, and their association with known archeological sites, while Flint and Flint provide an in-depth analysis of the location of a bridge built by the Coronado expedition across the Rio de Cicuye, which they suggest was the Pecos river, three or four days southeast of Cicuye (Pecos Pueblo). Vierra and Hordes summarize the archeological findings of a 16th century campsite in the Tiguex province in central New Mexico that they believe is a tent camp of the Coronado entrada. The archeological evidence includes shallow dugouts, 16th century Pueblo pottery, lithics (including an obsidian blade from valley of Mexico sources), wrought nails, a jack plate, clothing items, metal fragments, and sheep bones.

The Rio de Cicuye to Quivira route of the Coronado expedition is discussed in five papers in Part V. Two (by Donald Blakeslee and Blakeslee, Richard Flint, and Jack Hughes) concern the possible Coronado route across the staked plains and barrancas of the Texas panhandle, along with an initial archeological discussion of the Jimmy Owens site, likely a 1541 Coronado expedition campsite in Blanco Canyon, Texas. This important site was found during early 1990s metal detecting by a local collector from Floydada, Jimmy

Owens, and finds include numerous European-manufactured copper crossbow boltheads, horseshoes, horseshoe nails, "caret-head" carpenter's nails, a knife blade, a scabbard tip, and harness hardware, along with Rio Grande Glazeware, a possible Mesoamerican obsidian blade fragment, and possible Mexican ceramics.

Barrancas in Colima are discussed by W. Michael Mathes for comparison with the later barrancas crossed by Coronado's party on the Llano Estacado. Riley's paper focuses on the ethnic identity of the Teyas, one aboriginal bison-hunting group encountered on the staked plains. David Snow's paper reviews the manufacture of 16th century glazed pottery in the Rio Grande pueblos, and what they "tell us about Coronado's route, and those of subsequent expeditions" (p. 345) to the Southern Plains.

The volume ends with short concluding remarks by the editors, who note that "it is all but impossible to say with certainty that any particular event recorded in the sixteenth-century Coronado documents occurred at any specific place locatable on the ground on a modern map" (p. 384). Nevertheless, despite the daunting challenge that remains in delineating the route's path, it is clear that there is a substantial body of historical and archeological research currently underway on the Coronado route—the recent archeological investigations at the Jimmy Owens site in the Texas Panhandle being the most notable example—and the effects of the Spanish entrada on the character and complexity of the Native American groups contacted along the way. *The Coronado Expedition to Tierra Nueva* is a well-written and edited volume that should be of considerable interest to archeologists, historians, and general public concerned with the study of the early history of the Southwest.

*Goff Creek: Artifact Collection Strategy and Occupation Prehistory on the Southern High Plains, Texas County, Oklahoma*, by Jesse A. M. Ballenger. Sam Noble Oklahoma Museum of Natural History, University of Oklahoma, Oklahoma Anthropological Society Memoir 8, 1999. vi + 134 pp.

---

*Reviewed by David T. Hughes*

---

The Oklahoma Anthropological Society has a long tradition of reserving its Memoir series for those monographs that will make substantial contributions to our understanding of Oklahoma's past and the broader method and theory of anthropological archeology in the Southern Plains. Memoir 8 is no exception. Ballenger's ostensible purpose in this study is to make available information about the collections made by Ralph W. (Bill) White during his 20 years of collecting along Goff Creek in the Oklahoma Panhandle. While presenting that information, Ballenger also provides an excellent summary of the problems and solutions encountered in dealing with large surface collections made by avocational archeologists in general.

Each of the five chapters in the work presents an elemental part of the overall study. They are organized in such a way that the final interpretations are readily supported. The first chapter addresses the nature of avocational archeology surface collections and prior attempts to use them for interpretive analysis before discussing White's collections and his surface hunting strategies. The second and third chapters provide the obligatory nods to the setting and regional prehistory: important background against which the collection is to be compared. Chapter 4 is a detailed description of the Goff Creek collections. It is organized along the lines of traditional typology with discussion divided into projectile points, preforms, bifacial knives, and other kinds of tools. Within each of these sections copious illustrations, statistical tables, and descriptions provide ample material for evaluating the typological assignments Ballenger applied to the collection.

Ballenger reviews several important methodological questions and offers some interpretations of the Goff Creek collection in his concluding chapter. Although White had recorded some location information for his collections, analysis of the general collection in terms of sites was not practical.

Therefore, Ballenger reviews some of the current approaches to non-site archeology prior to offering interpretations and speculations about the collection. One of the interpretations offered is that there is a limited representation of Early and Middle Archaic projectile points from Goff Creek that may support some of the earlier speculation about a reduced Altithermal presence in the region or that "cultural activity within Goff Creek was severely limited during this period" (p. 93). Other than the limited Early and Middle Archaic presence, almost all other time periods that are acknowledged for the Southern Plains are represented in the Goff Creek collection.

In site-based archeology, the relative frequency of different kinds of tools has proven useful to interpreting site function. Ballenger attempts to use the frequency of tools, specifically the ratio of projectile points to scrapers, to evaluate probable kinds of activities prehistoric occupants undertook in the Goff Creek valley. The result is not substantial and Ballenger acknowledges that there is too little comparative data from other settings to permit meaningful comparisons with a sample like the White collection. Analysis of raw materials that comprise the Goff Creek collection show a strong preponderance of Alibates agate with a tendency for increased use of local materials during the Early and Middle Archaic (pp. 95-96). In discussing tool maintenance patterns, "Paleoindian and Early-Middle Archaic projectile points were generally more exhausted when they were lost or discarded compared to Late Archaic, Woodland, or Late Prehistoric forms" (p. 100). An explanation for this pattern is the difference between directly acquired and traded raw materials: "Direct acquisition would encourage at least some of an individual's tools to begin their uses-lives near the source, whereas trade delays the manufacture of tools and therefore allows them to begin their use-lives much farther from the source" (p. 101).

*Goff Creek* will be of interest to anyone who is involved with analyzing the collections of avocational archeologists and weekend relic collectors and those who are developing regional information on the prehistory of the Southern Plains. Perhaps the most important contributions of the report are the basic information about the nature of the artifacts found along Goff Creek, a

little known area of the Southern Plains, and the suggestions and interpretations offered. The latter would make excellent starting points for several lines of methodological research in archeology. The monograph is well written with a minimum of jargon and technical vocabulary. It is easy to read, coherently organized, and profusely illustrated.

---

## AUTHORS

*David T. Hughes*, Department of Anthropology, Wichita State University, Wichita, Kansas

*Timothy K. Pertula*, Archeological & Environmental Consultants, Austin

*Curtis Tunnell*, Austin

---

